UNIVERSITY OF SOUTHAMPTON

NARRATIVE IDENTITY AND DEMENTIA

Narrative and Emotion in Older People with Dementia

VOLUME ONE

(I)

Marie Annette Mills

Doctor of Philosophy

Department of Social Work Studies

April 1995

UNIVERSITY OF SOUTHAMPTON

ABSTRACT

FACULTY OF SOCIAL SCIENCES

SOCIAL WORK

Doctor of Philosophy

NARRATIVE IDENTITY AND DEMENTIA

Narrative and Emotion in Older People with Dementia

By Marie Annette Mills

Little research has been carried out on the subject of memory, dementia and emotion. However, there is a growing literature on the relationship between cognition and emotion (Izard, 1991), and between emotion and memory (Williams et al, 1988). The importance of emotion has been identified within the study of ageing (Bromley, 1990), including that of dementia care (Kitwood, 1990a). Emotional memories in dementia, therefore, seem worthy of investigation.

A small sample of moderately to severely demented elderly people who live in the community, and use psychogeriatric day services, were investigated to see if they could recall emotional memories with the help of interviewer counselling skills. Background information, including details of significant past life experiences and interests of informants, was given by relatives and staff in the settings. The investigation took place over a two year period. Informants were normally seen, individually, each week. Interviews were recorded and transcribed. The number of recorded and transcribed individual interviews with each informant were between thirteen and twenty five.

The data is presented in the form of longitudinal case-studies, and analysed using quasi-judicial methods, (Bromley, 1986), and a grounded theory approach. Analysis of the data indicated that all informants recalled emotional autobiographical memories. Over time, it became apparent that these emotional memories formed fragmented pieces of the informant's personal narratives. The emotions associated with their narratives appeared to be a strong aid to recall. These partial narratives gradually cohered into whole stories and provided all informants with a sense of narrative identity. This sense of narrative identity began to dissolve for some informants as their illness progressed and their stories faded from memory. For other informants, who were not so devastated by their illness, their stories and narrative identity remained with them. Although outcomes varied for all informants, all experienced varying levels of increased well-being through the recall of their narrative.

Possible therapeutic benefits are suggested by this approach. Reminiscence work, combined with carer/interviewer counselling skills, may lead to the maintenance of the narrative in dementia and, thus, an increase in personhood. Topics of further investigation, suggested by this research, include premorbid personality traits and preventative counselling for those identified as at risk. Further studies should take into account the relationship between memory, dementia and emotion.

DEDICATION

To the people who took part in this study

Mrs Abigail Woodley
Mr. Ronnie Silverthorne
Mr. Charles Clerkenwell
Mrs. Bessie Pinks
Mr. Robert Biddley
Mr. Andrew Coxley
Mr. Melvin Rider
Mr. Hugh Raft

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

To Professor Peter Coleman and Dr. Chris Colbourn, who guided my footsteps through the maze of research. These splendid people are strongly recommended to other students.

To my husband and family who have endured the travail of the PhD process with stoic endurance and loving support.

To the staff and residents of Assisi House who allowed me to undertake this research by managing very well without me.

To CCETSW, who made this work possible

To friends, colleagues, and the many others, whose assistance I have frequently commanded over the last three years.

I thank you all

CONTENTS

INTRODUCTION TO THE STUDY

The aim of this study is to investigate the characteristic features of emotional memories, that may be still present, in a small group of older people with some form of dementia. The literature on the presence of emotions in dementia is relatively sparse, although a number of publications has appeared on the subject in recent years (Bromley, 1990; Hausman, 1992; Kitwood, 1990a; Mills and Coleman, 1994)

A small pilot study, undertaken with this particular client group, indicated that some demented elderly people could recall past and present concerns (Mills, 1991). All informants were seen on an individual basis over a period of three months. Counselling strategies were used during the research interviews in order to facilitate recall and disclosure. This investigation further suggested that these informants displayed appropriate emotions associated with their memories. It was decided, therefore, that these psychological phenomena were worthy of further investigation.

Is it possible that, using a similar approach, most older people with dementia may recall intact emotional memories associated with past and present events? Further, might these memories of a personal past contain pieces of information that form part of their life histories, or life stories. In addition, would the aided recall of these emotional memories, over time, allow these memories to remain, or would they gradually fade into oblivion due to the progression of the illness? What type of emotional memories would be found amongst these older people? Would they be 'good' positive memories or might

they be 'sad' and possibly negative? These are some of the questions that this investigation hopes to address. Thus, this work is concerned with tripartite concepts of dementia, memory and emotions, all of which are psychological, social and biological phenomena. This structure is comprised of an illness for which there is no known cause or cure, the mysterious frameworks and processes of a mental phenomenon which is poorly understood, and the significance of the emotions for which there are over a hundred known theories.

Given the paucity of present knowledge, generated theory will, of necessity, be cumulative rather than complete. Baddeley (1992) suggests that his own personal choice of theory is for breadth of application, as opposed to detailed predictions. This application of 'a broad sweep theory' has great bearing on this current work, concerned as it is with an illness that disrupts and destroys many thousands of lives. This process of disintegration is exacerbated by the poverty of our present understanding. Tobin (1991) suggests that it can often lead to the process of the de-selfing of the sufferer, or which, perhaps, has been more appropriately described by Kitwood (1990a, 1993), and Kitwood and Bredin (1992) as the disintegration of personhood.

I, myself, have a personal interest in this area of research. I have been involved in residential work with the elderly for some seventeen years, the last eleven of which have been as a manager/owner of a Residential Home for twenty elderly people. Twelve of our residents have some type of dementia and, of this number, eleven have this illness in a moderate to severe form. It is noticeable that, amongst

many of our new referrals, the main need for residential care is due to some type of dementia. Bond et al (1990) suggest that this would appear to be a general phenomenon in the UK at the present time.

From a subjective viewpoint, my work with confused elderly people has led me to the discovery that the use of basic counselling skills, in a discussion of their past life, leads to an immediate reduction in negative behaviour. Of equal, if not of greater importance, is the fact that these elderly people seem to enjoy recalling pieces of their life story. As they share these memories with us, we have learnt to see them as the people they once were. These shared experiences also enable us to form relationships that are based on understanding, respect, and affection, rather than mere protective concern. Further, it is suggested that it is this type of approach which will encourage well-being and personhood for sufferers of dementia (Kitwood, 1993).

What must older people with dementia endure in the struggle to retain personhood? Lyons (1982, p.6) painfully tried to perceive, and to describe, his wife's struggle to maintain self identity in the midst of this progressive illness:

"Do you really know how terribly alone I am, closed in and cut off from so many people and so many things around me? How I try and why I cry?"

Or more recently, an actual conversation with an older person with dementia, indicated his own personal torment. We explored his extreme anxieties over his present state and I gently suggested that life must seem rather mystifying and frightening. He looked at me

sadly, and said with great calmness:

"That is definitely understating the case".

As Lyons further explores his wife's thoughts, he suggests that the barriers of communication are not as insurmountable as might be first supposed:

"I know that you cannot cut down all the barriers that isolate me. But you can look for those things which reduce my frustration, which help smooth the way in the face of what confounds me, if you take the time and make the effort to help me bridge, at least partially, the cognitive gap which separates me from our reality. I am not gone. I am here."

Ethical justification for this investigation can, perhaps, rest on the process of this research, which may allow some older people with dementia to voice their concerns and to share some of their emotional personal past with another human being. It may lead to a greater understanding of a more positive approach in our treatment of demented older people. Further, it is hoped that this study will allow us to perceive and share this reality of others which may be different to our own. Given our present knowledge of this multi-faceted and multi-factorial illness, together with our incomplete understanding of memory and emotions, it is, in many respects, a journey into the unknown.

CHAPTER ONE

DEMENTIA, REMINISCENCE, AND COUNSELLING SKILLS

1.1 INTRODUCTION

This investigation is concerned with the dementing elderly, their memories of past events, or autobiographical memory, and the emotions associated with this type of recall. This chapter will focus on the background to the study. There will be a discussion of the elderly population, including present and predicted numbers of dementia sufferers, together with a general discussion of the dementias. Following the findings of the pilot investigation, informants will be invited to reminisce with the help of interviewer counselling skills. Reminiscence theory and counselling, therefore, will be discussed in some detail.

Further, studies which indicate the importance of reminiscence therapy, and the use of counselling skills, will also be examined, together with their combined therapeutic implications for this client group. Finally, there will be a review of the significant findings of the pilot study which has led to this present investigation. A review of the literature will be discussed throughout chapters one to seven.

1.2 DEMOGRAPHIC CHANGES IN THE ELDERLY POPULATION

Population statistics indicate that we are part of an ageing world. Throughout this century, the proportion of people aged 60 years and over, has increased. Unfortunately, this is often not seen as welcome news. An ageing population supported by a smaller working

population may lead to an inability to sustain expenditure on their health and welfare. By the year 2010, one fifth of the population of Switzerland and Germany is expected to be over the age of 65 years. Other developed countries will rapidly follow suit after this date (The Economist, 1990). World Population Prospects (1986) indicate that in 1985, 286 million of the total world population were aged 65+ years, and it is estimated that by the year 2025, this group will rise to 800 million. The elderly will, by this time, account for 9.7% of the total world population.

In this country, there is also a significant increase in the number of older adults. Falkingham (1989) points out that in 1981, Britain had a total elderly population of 9.7 million. The numbers of young elderly, that is those aged 60/65-70 years, are decreasing but the numbers of those aged 75+ years are increasing. It is this latter group which is expected to increase until 2030. Ineichen (1987) suggests that it is probable that 7% of the total population of elderly in industrialised societies will develop a dementia and, among those aged 80+ years, this figure may be as high as 20%.

In this country, OPCS (1982) estimates that by the year 2001 this age group will form a total population of 1.1 million people and, of this number, one in five will have some type of dementia. It would appear, therefore, that many numbers of elderly people will suffer from a chronic loss of brain function, due to some type of dementia. This group will require medical and social interventions on a large scale, if their quality of life is not to be further eroded. This, as has already been indicated, is not a simple matter. Research into the dementias has led to a greater understanding of the problem, but, to date, has

provided no proven cause or effective cure.

1.3 THE DEMENTIAS.

Every type of dementia has one thing in common : a loss of intellectual power (Woods, 1989, p.18.). Potentially reversible dementias can originate due to a variety of causes or aetiologies such as toxic, metabolic, neoplastic (malignant or benign tumour) and infectious processes. Further, drug overload, constipation, and infections in intellectually intact older people, can lead to short term confusional states. Fortunately, normal cognitive functioning usually returns with the successful treatment of the underlying cause of the illness.

Definition of Dementia.

The term dementia is often widely, and inappropriately, used to describe any syndrome that is not obviously an acquired cognitive impairment due to a delirium or psychiatric disorder. Odenheimer (1989) defines dementia as a clinical syndrome of acquired decline of cognitive functions that is characterised by impaired memory, plus deficits in higher cortical functions, such as language or visuospatial function.

The Irreversible Dementias

The two most common forms of irreversible dementia are Alzheimer's disease and multi-infarct dementia. These two types of dementia will be discussed in some depth, as it is probable that all informants used

in the investigation will suffer from one or both types of this illness.

Alzheimer's Disease (AD)

Alzheimer's disease accounts for approximately fifty per cent of the dementing elderly population. This disease can affect people in their 30's, 40's and 50's, although it becomes more common with increasing age. The aetiology of this illness is unknown, although there are fairly well established guidelines for the clinical diagnosis of Alzheimer's disease. Various hypotheses have been postulated to explain the structural and neurochemical changes in the brain, but the trigger for this degeneration remains unclear. Odenheimer (1989) suggests that any, or all, of these aetiologies, such as toxic, genetic, infection and trauma theories, may play a part in determining the key cause of this type of brain degeneration. At present, it is not possible to give a definite diagnosis of Alzheimer's disease other than by brain biopsy.

Alzheimer's disease is clinically defined by Schwartz (1990) as the progressive decline in two or more major areas of cognition, where this decline cannot be attributed to other known systemic diseases, or brain disorders. Further, Schwartz suggests that when a diagnosis is made on clinical evidence alone, the patient can only be assumed to be suffering from possible AD or dementia of the Alzheimer's type (DAT). Other dementias of the Alzheimer's type, such as Picks disease or simple non specific dementia, are probably due to a primary, idiopathic neuronal degeneration. This can be contrasted with strokes associated with multi infarct dementia, and other toxic, metabolic and viral encephalopathies known to cause dementia. Alzheimer's

Disease, itself, is characterised by specific changes in the brain structure. These are plaques, found mainly in the outer layer of the brain, or cortex, and tangles, which are neurofibrillary tangles present within brain cell neurones. These changes in the brain structure were recognised at the turn of the century, during autopsy, by Alois Alzheimer, a German neurologist.

Future research, however, will have to account for the plaques and tangles, which occur in lesser numbers in the brains of non demented elderly people. Further, research indicates that plaques and neurofibrillary tangles are clearly dissociable events. Damasio et al (1990) suggest that although the degenerative pathology is often described as diffuse, it is a disease of neuronal death that is selective or modular in nature. Schwartz and Stark (1990, p.79.) argue that these various degenerative changes may be quite selective in their sites of action, targeting the neuronal networks and neurochemical systems that form the fundamental 'modules' of the brain in relation to cognition. These neuronal networks include the hippocampal formations which are known to be closely involved in retrieval and recall. These findings relating to episodic memory, will be discussed in greater detail in chapter two.

Neuronal changes, however, are not only selective in their targets, but will also indicate an individual pathology within patients. It is this individualised process that does not permit a standard cognitive profile but, according to Damasio et al (1990, p. 92.), will always include an impairment of learning and retrieval of memory in verbal and non verbal domains, an eventual impairment in problem solving, and an eventual impairment of emotion and affect. It is recognised,

however, that affected cortical regions will function defectively, rather than not at all. Damasio et al further suggest that the symptoms associated with AD emerge gradually and insidiously, after many years of silent addition to cellular damage, and disruption to specific neuronal circuitry. In some parts of the system, this damage may affect more than half of the available neurones before symptoms become manifest, although intervening factors such as depression and stroke may precipitate diagnosis (Damasio et al, 1990, p.97-98.).

Multi-Infarct Dementia (MID.)

Most elderly people are found to have suffered infarcts, leading to the death of brain tissue during old age. Stuart-Hamilton (1991) suggests that this can be seen to be symptomatic of normal ageing, with little effect on the individual concerned. In MID, however, these infarcts occur in greater abundance. Sufficient areas of the brain are progressively affected, leading to an irreversible state of dementia. Although infarcts occur relatively randomly, the cortex and other areas controlling higher function, tend to be severely compromised. It is known that a number of cardiovascular illnesses can induce MID. There may also be a familial link.

Both Stuart-Hamilton (1991) and Odenheimer (1989) suggest that this is a difficult disease to diagnose because MID may mimic the effects of dementias of other aetiologies. However, the main difference between this and other dementias, is the progress of the disease, which has an abrupt onset followed by a stepwise, uneven rate of decline. Memory is usually always affected early in the illness and, in some instances, intellectual deficits are lacunar in nature (Stuart-

Hamilton, 1991, p.125.). The physical examination will often give evidence of cardiovascular disease and the patient may demonstrate a labile affect, together with other symptoms. Approximately one fifth of the dementing elderly population suffer from multi-infarct dementia, with an average age of onset of 65 years of age. A further fifth suffer from a combination of DAT and MID. Those most at risk have a history of hypertension, cardiac disease, and smoking.

Less Common Dementias

Less common types of dementia can include Parkinson's Disease (PD) which is primarily a disorder of movement. Scott et al (1985) suggest that the ultimate cause of this neurological illness appears to be the degeneration and loss of neurones in the dopaminergic systems. There are strong indications that a proportion of PD sufferers do have dementia. It is not clear if the dementia arises from the same cause as PD, or whether the two conditions occur by chance (Woods 1989, p.24.). Other less common dementias include : Alcohol Related Dementia, Pick's Disease, Binswanger Disease, Neurosyphilis, Huntingdon's Disease, AIDS Related Dementia and Creutzfeldt-Jacob Disease. Odenheimer (1989) and Woods (1989) point out that Creutzfeldt-Jacob Disease is rare, affecting less than one person in a million normally before the age of sixty. It is felt to be significant in that the cause of this illness is thought to be viral in origin.

American studies indicate that nearly four million of their citizens have some type of dementia (Thal, 1988). Scott Hinkle (1990) argues that recognition, diagnosis, assessment, and treatment of these disorders have become a major concern for all health care

professionals. At present, Woods (1989) estimates that there are about seven hundred and fifty thousand sufferers in the United Kingdom. These older adults have DAT and/or MID, in about seventy per cent of those elderly with some type of dementia. With increasing world wide numbers, comes increasing costs in terms of community support services, hospital and residential provision. It is a progressive illness that destroys the life of the sufferer and devastates the family involved (Woods, 1989, p.13.). There is a need to adopt alternative coping strategies in the face of overwhelming loss.

The Importance of Psychological Processes in Dementia

Laing (1967) suggests that there is an argument that all human thought and actions are meaningful if related to the person's situation. Laing argues that all action is intelligible if only we take the pains to understand it. Laing is primarily concerned with functional rather than organic mental illness, but Busfield (1986) suggests that the proven case for demonstrating the cause of dementia as organic, does not rule out any psychological processes that may precipitate or generate such biological changes.

Kitwood has suggested two 'vicious circle' theories of the dementing process that are based on [one] the neurological impairment and [two], some assumed psychogenic causation of neurological impairment. He argues that the 'labelling' or medical diagnosis of neurological impairment produces a type of 'malignant' social psychology imposed on the neurologically impaired individual that can damage the fragile self esteem and 'personhood' of the older person. He suggests that this aspect of the dementing process should

be investigated by medical science research, which has undervalued the importance of this concept. Kitwood (1990b) argues the unexplained variance of some 70% between neuropathology and dementia, suggests that medical science verifies this viewpoint. He further suggests that there is considerable overlap between the observed condition of the brains of mentally well-presented and those of demented elderly people (Kitwood, 1989). Indeed, this is one of the questions for future research, proposed by others in the field. Damasio et al (1990, p.98.) state that "the issue of when enough impairment is enough, is important and unresolved".

The Impact of Irreversible Dementia on the Individual

In dementia, the sufferer will gradually begin to lose memory and learning ability. The ability to plan and to "understand how to work things out" will also be affected. As the condition worsens, the person will gradually become less able to care for themselves (Woods, 1989, p.38.). It is impossible to state, with any accuracy, how the individual's condition will change and develop over time, due to the fact that there are many types of dementia. Schwartz (1990) and Stuart-Hamilton (1991) suggest that even in DAT, there are probably many different sub-types within this illness.

Woods (1989), among others, suggests that the progressive decline of cognitive functioning in older dementing people normally occurs over some years. Do sufferers have any insight into their condition? Woods argues that a large proportion of older people, with this type of illness, are, "vaguely aware that something is wrong" (Woods, 1989, p.46.). He further suggests that this sense of loss produces the

sadness and distress which is so common in the early stages of this disease. Failure to produce successful coping devices may also increase this distress and despair. Denial of loss of brain function can also be very common and can result in aggression due to the sense of "frustration and humiliation of failure". For sufferers to have a full awareness of AD would be an inconceivable assault on their integrity, and a threat to their very existence (Woods, 1989, p.47.).

In my own experiences, I have found that most sufferers of dementia do know that they are 'different'. I have always seen the acceptance of this illness by the person concerned, as akin to the process of grief and bereavement. Thus, I have seen people experience sadness, anguish, anger, denial, depression, and, eventually, acceptance. Some people may never complete this process and may stay permanently locked into a state of denial and anger. For these people, it is always 'other people' who are responsible for the loss of belongings, or who have muddled their lives. Other older dementing people seem to comfortably accept that their memory is poor.

This process of successful adaptation to the dementing process is a central theme of the writings and research of Kitwood, who has been largely instrumental in bringing this issue into the forefront of academic and practitioner discussion. In some of his earlier writings, he innovatively focuses on the previously neglected areas of the psychological relationships within dementia, and explores the relationship between the experiential or feeling self and the adaptive self, which is formed through our social interactions with others. Dementia removes the cognitive supports that surround the adapted self and leaves the experiential self exposed and vulnerable. This

vulnerability may be enhanced by an immature and wounded experiential self. It is, of course, this self that is sought and supported within most forms of psychotherapy.

Kitwood (1988, p.129.) further suggests that "the psychological precondition of dementia is an underdeveloped experiencing self, while the adapted self is seriously undermined". This 'personal' framing of dementia indicates the personal nature of the illness. It is an existential plight of persons, which cannot be defined solely in a managerial and technical framework. This thesis has had profound influences in the developing paradigm of dementia care, and, indeed, forms part of the basic theoretical and therapeutic arguments for this present work.

Thus, we come to understand the inhibitions posed by the great medical barrier reef, which creates a sharp divide between patient and professional carer. As these technical barricades fall away, understanding grows, and good care skills assume the prominence long denied. This process of instrumentalisation creates a personal environment in which the sufferer of dementia is free to be him or herself, albeit with the help and support of others. This empowerment of a person with failing cognitive processes restores personhood, a sense of the individual uniqueness of being and integrity, within the state of dementia.

The personal environment has been compared by Kitwood (1990b) to that of the maternal facilitating environment as portrayed in the works of Winnicott. This maternal environment provides the young child with the needs of the emerging self. The mother figure or primary

carer provides the environment for the creation of reality acceptance, where this life long task begins. Winnicott (1971) suggests that no human being is ever free from the strain of relating inner and outer reality. At times these strains can be so great as to lead to a psychotic illness. Kitwood (1990b) perceives the state of unattended dementia as similar to that of a semi-psychotic state, which would benefit from psychotherapeutic interventions. These observations have also received the agreement of others (Hausman, 1992; Mills, 1991; Mills and Walker, 1994; Woods et al, 1992).

1.4 PSYCHOTHERAPEUTIC INTERVENTIONS

Scrutton (1989) suggests that counselling is essentially an approach to human communication. It is a part of psychotherapeutic strategies. Counselling is a much overworked term for what is, in essence, a complex process, for it requires the possession of intuitive and learned skills. It is a helping process that enables the respondent or client to explore an area, or areas, of their lives that has caused loss of well-being. The loss of well-being may be so great as to manifest itself in actual mental and/or physical illness.

Egan (1975) and Webster and Young (1988) suggest that counsellors, or 'skilled helpers', must have a variety of skills, in order to help respondents or clients explore painful experiences. They need to be attentive and active listeners. This implies that the helper will orient his/her self towards the client by positive body posture, and listening to verbal and non verbal responses. This approach calls for dynamic understanding, respect, trustworthiness, empathy (both basic and advanced) insight, and a non-judgmental stance. Egan (1975) argues

that it also involves listening to client's affect, the feelings and emotions that are, in any way, connected to the client's experiences and behaviours. Nelson-Jones (1993, p.66.) further suggests that counsellors should be genuine, spontaneous, and "able to resonate and respond appropriately to clients' feelings".

This latter personal attribute is part of empathy which is defined by Reiser and Rosen (1984, p.27.) "as the ability to fully understand and share in another's feelings, coupled with the ability to know that those feelings are not identical to one's own". Much of the research and literature on empathy have resulted from the work of Carl Rogers, one of the founding fathers of Humanistic Psychology. Rogers sees empathy as crucial when the other person is "hurting, confused, troubled, anxious, terrified, and doubtful of self worth" (Rogers, 1975, p.9.). Many of us who are practitioners involved in the care of dementing elderly people have seen these painful states all too often.

The use of these skills by the psychotherapist, should enable a trusting and effective relationship to develop between two people in an appropriate interview situation. A counselling interview is assumed to be a reciprocal influencing process, which indicates that both the client and counsellor will be affected by the therapeutic process. Much of the research on factors affecting client change yields inconsistent and non significant data. However, a small study recently undertaken by Davies (1993) for a Health Authority in England, indicates that all one hundred and two clients felt better following therapy. Over 92% felt they would return for further counselling if necessary and 76% felt they would be able to cope with life more effectively in the future. Further, most clients expressed positive views regarding their working

relationship with the counsellor.

Highlen and Hill (1984) suggest that the personal qualities of a counsellor are difficult to identify and measure accurately. Further, Parloff et al (1978) argue that the data regarding the relationship between therapist experience and counselling outcomes are unclear. It would appear that counsellors in training may be more effective than experienced colleagues and vice versa. Against this background of inconclusive findings, it must be said that most counselling services are stretched to capacity. Relate and other agencies have fairly long waiting lists. Counselling is a service that is much in demand.

The demand for this service does not include many requests from elderly people, although Butler and Lewis (1982) suggest that mental health concerns tend to increase with advancing age. Kramer et al (1975) point out that at least 25%, and perhaps as many as 65%, of all older persons, have some kind of treatable mental health problem. Flemming et al (1986) indicate that these needs are not met in America. There, it is estimated that the elderly form 12% of the population, but only form 6% of the case load of community mental health practitioners, and 2% of the case load of private practitioners. Further, Roybal (1988) argues that older people who are housebound, have little access to mental health services.

A number of reasons have been proposed for this underservice of mental health care to older persons. It is noted that many older people will seek the help of their doctor as opposed to mental health care organisations. Myers (1990) suggests that this may be due to the negative stigma associated with such services from their youth, when

only the severely impaired received help. There is probably also a desire to retain independence and privacy, with a corresponding lack of vocabulary for emotional issues in old age. Most older people come from a generation which is not used to discussing feelings.

Further, as Myers and Blake (1984) comment, there is lack of sufficient training to meet the needs of older people. Butler and Lewis (1982) argue that there is also an issue of bias against older clients. Knight (1986a) suggests that there are also other social and economic factors that prohibit providers from accepting older people as clients. In Britain, these attitudes are all too familiar, especially amongst those of us involved in any way, with provision of services for the older members of our society. Scrutton (1989) argues that social provision for the elderly is under resourced and many problems associated with ageing are closely linked to the injustice of social provision. The counselling agendas of old age should not overlook the dominance of this ideology, which incorporates social values and ageism. It would be quite wrong, however, to assume that older people have concerns that are only associated with the ageing process. As Scrutton (1989) points out, they are individuals with a unique set of experiences. These experiences have been gathered over many years, giving them the resource of a wealth of experience and coping skills, to use in the changing circumstances of later life.

The knowledge that older people are reluctant to seek help from mental health services, or to readily accept these services when they are available, leads to the suggestion by Myers (1990) that it is likely that help must be proffered using different terminology such as life review discussions. It must be recognised that, even so, there may be

areas of an older person's life that are too personal to be discussed. This should not be treated as resistance, but rather as a reluctance to participate.

The use of the life review in working with older clients is not a new concept. It is a function of reminiscence which Butler (1963) argued was a normal activity in old age, in that it could lead to life review which is a process that people may have to undergo, if they are to come to terms with their 'lived' lives. Scrutton (1989) and Waters (1990) among others, suggest that the goal of life review therapy is to help clients recall past events and relationships, consider their meaning and ideally develop a sense of pride in their accomplishments. This process creates a climate for the development of ego integrity, which is the final life task of Erikson's concept of the stages of life (Erikson, 1963).

Thus, within the counselling discipline for older people, there is a school of thought which advocates the use of life review techniques with some elderly people. Coleman (1986) suggests that not all older people will want to engage in the life review process, or even in that of reminiscence. However, reminiscence therapy has become a major tool for many practitioners engaged in various aspects of work with this client group.

1.5 REMINISCENCE

Reminiscence, according to the Literature, is the recalling of past life experiences. Molinari and Reichlin (1985) define reminiscence as a process of recollection that is carried out internally or in the presence

of others. From this definition, it is possible to see that human beings of any age will reminisce about past experiences. Reminiscence, then, is not an activity solely ascribed to the elders in our society. It is a normal function of the life process. The study of reminiscence work with the elderly would indicate that the use of reminiscence/life review therapies does produce some long term beneficial effects in non dementing elderly people.

Reminiscence among the elderly was not always regarded as a normal function of the life process. It was seen as a negative component of the ageing process (Coleman, 1986). It was felt to indicate organic impairment of the intellect (Dobrof, 1984). Cummings and Henry (1961) argued that it could be perceived as a manifestation of the process of ageing which lead to disengagement, a process by which the elderly 'withdrew' from concerns with the outside world. Against this background of negative attitudes towards a preoccupation with the past (Dobrof, 1984), came an article by Butler (1963) which gave an entirely different view to reminiscence among the elderly. Butler's argument that reminiscence was a normal activity in old age, which may lead to life review, fell on fertile ground.

Although, as Coleman (1986) suggests, one article cannot change attitudes within a particular field of study, Butler did, as it were, open the door to others interested in the understanding of reminiscence. Reminiscence became acknowledged, not only as a normal activity for the elderly, but also became seen as a therapeutic and beneficial intervention. Butler's arguments, that most individuals need to justify their existence and hence the need for life review, found some detractors. They argued that the usefulness of

reminiscence could be best understood by Erikson's theory of the stages of life, with final stage being the achievement of integrity (Erikson, 1963). Other theorists, such as Carlson (1984), Castelnuovo-Tedesco (1978), and McMahon and Rhudick (1964), suggested that reminiscence could also be seen as a preservation of self in the threat, or face of loss.

Coleman (1986, p.35.) suggests that it is possible for "someone whose life has worked out comfortably", to be less inclined to be critical about their past. Whatever the arguments, it would seem to make sense to argue that no person could have lived a life in which there were not some regrets. Some of these past regrets may be so strong as to become unresolved conflicts. Lewis and Butler (1974) suggest that reminiscence is a psychotherapeutic function in which an older person reflects on their life in order to resolve, reorganise, and reintegrate, what is troubling or preoccupying them. Although recurring memories may simply be part of the recall process, Kaminsky (1984) suggests that they can also reflect repeated attempts to resolve painful memories. Feil (1985) perceives the confused ramblings of the demented elderly as an attempt to resolve past conflicts. She follows the work of Erikson, in that she describes this as a new life stage with a new life task.

Reminiscence, therefore, can serve a variety of functions. It is 'story telling' (McMahon and Rhudick, 1964; Wong and Watt, 1991). It is a story that justifies existence (Lieberman and Tobin, 1983; Wong and Watt, 1991). It is a psychotherapeutic function that can resolve a troubled past. (Lewis and Butler, 1974; Wong and Watt, 1991). These studies of reminiscence indicate the existence of three major types of

reminiscence, although Wong and Watt (1991) have suggested a new taxonomy of reminiscence that indicates six types of reminiscence. Some of these, however, closely parallel existing theory.

a) Story Telling Reminiscence/Informative Reminiscence

McMahon and Rhudik (1964) and Lo Gerfo (1980) suggest that this type of reminiscence can be identified with nostalgia, oral history, and an enhancement of self esteem. It also allows older people to act as teachers/guides to the younger members of our society in that they act as informants/interpreters to past societal, social and familial processes. Wong and Watt (1991) perceive this type of reminiscence as closely associated with the concept of instrumental reminiscence. The defining characteristics of this type of reminiscence include recollection of past goals and achievements, together with a sense of an internal locus of control, which Rodin et al (1985), Schulz (1976), and Slivinske and Fitch (1987) suggest is related to life satisfaction and subjective good health. Billings and Moos (1981), Folkman et al (1986), and Lazarus and Folkman (1984) further suggest that it indicates the use of problem solving strategies, which have been shown to be a buffer against emotional distress.

b) Evaluative Reminiscence/Life Review Reminiscence

This type of reminiscence must have an evaluative component in order to allow the commencement of the life review process. Butler defines life review as a "naturally occurring, universal mental process characterised by the progressive return to consciousness of past experience ....., prompted by the realisation of approaching

dissolution and death, and the inability to maintain one's sense of personal invulnerability" (Butler, 1963, p.66.). Wong and Watt (1991) regard this as similar to integrative reminiscence. Lo Gerfo (1980), McMahon and Rhudik (1964), and Wong and Watt (1991) argue that life review reminiscence is, therefore, very different to story telling reminiscence, in that it is a personal struggle to come to terms with the past.

c) Defensive/Obsessive/Escapist Reminiscence

This type of reminiscence allows the past to be defined as more important than the present, in order to reduce the anxieties produced by declining social, physical, and mental states, and/or the feelings of guilt produced by an unsatisfactory life review (Lo Gerfo, 1980; McMahon and Rhudik, 1964; Wong and Watt, 1991).

Life Review can therefore, be defined as a "form of reminiscence in which the past is actively evaluated and conflict is necessary for resolution to occur" (Molinari and Reichlin, 1985, p.83.).

A recent review of the literature on reminiscence indicates that much of the published work on this process has clouded research issues. Haight (1991) argues that 'The who, what, when, where, and why, have yet to be identified'. The proliferation of literature in this area has led Haight to suggest that researchers must examine the literature in depth, in order to separate experimental data from theory building articles. However, she acknowledges the great strides made in the field of reminiscence, and perceives it to be a highly effective tool for practitioners. Wong and Watt (1991) have made progress in the

task of defining those types of reminiscence that are associated with successful ageing. They suggest that successful agers show significantly more integrative and instrumental reminiscence, but less obsessive reminiscence, than their unsuccessful counterparts.

A review of the above literature indicates that it is possible to view the phenomenon of reminiscence in a variety of ways for, as Haight (1991) indicates, it is a multi-varied concept. It is also necessary to see reminiscence as a total process that may encompass all, or part, of the identified categories. The use of reminiscence, either in groups or on an individual basis, is also important. Haight (1991) identifies forty one research reports published since 1960. Of these, twenty one were discussions of group reminiscence, while the remaining twenty were with individuals. Wong and Watt's (1991) study focussed on a large group of carefully screened informants (one hundred and seventy one) who were interviewed individually.

Lewis (1971) argues that it seems probable that reminiscence can be a helpful method of coping with the demands of the ageing process. Further, Sherman (1985) suggests that it may develop greater self acceptance. Lewis and Butler (1974) perceive it as possibly helping to evaluate the meaning of an older person's life, and give an expanded understanding of their past. Haight's (1988) study of structured reminiscence with some homebound elderly people indicates increased life satisfaction. Coleman (1986, p.160.) suggests that memories for many people will be a treasure, a solace and a source of wonder. He sees it as impossible, however, "to make simple generalisations of the value of reminiscence" (Coleman, 1986, p.158.).

Most articles and reports of the use of life review/reminiscence therapy focus on group work with non dementing elderly people. Some, however, have used this approach with older people who have failing cognitive functioning.

Applied Reminiscence/Life Review Therapies Used With Dementing Elderly People

Most published works detailing reminiscence work with the confused elderly, have focussed on group reminiscence work with these subjects. Some, such as Isohanni (1990) have seen reminiscence as part of a 'coping strategy' that allows demented elderly to function as part of a therapeutic community model of care. Another study by Holland (1987) has postulated that the semantic realities of present day, time, place, and people, would become salient and memorable if linked with the past.

Kiernat (1979) argues that group reminiscence work with confused elderly people allows the group leader to become the learner with the group providing the learning material. Yet a further paper, by Cook (1984) suggests that group reminiscence work, with confused nursing home residents, led to changes in behaviour and demeanour. Members appeared more alert as the sessions progressed. Humour and laughter were more frequent. There seemed a genuine desire to communicate. The most apparent change was the gradually increasing length of time that members spent in socialising before, and after, each session. Cook acknowledges that this project was not a controlled scientific experiment, and states that the findings are tentative and must be confirmed by a formal study.

Farran and Keane-Hagerty (1989) suggest the best way of seeing the real person behind the dementia is the use of validation and reminiscence therapy. The study suggests that the carer should try to see who the person was in the past. This, the authors suggest, will help to clarify the context of confusing statements. Bornat's (1985) article on the use of reminiscence aids to help recall the past, leads to the importance of the work by John Adams (1986) on the need to surround patients with dementia, with articles of their past or of a past era. Adams argues that personal reminiscences, prompted by the use of such cues, enables individual identity to be restored. The nursing staff and visitors to the ward will see the individual as a person, not just as a bed occupant. In an earlier article, Adams also suggests that it is not important if recalled experiences are not reliable in every respect, because "they recreate a world we have lost and they help to furnish the milieu from which the patient came" (Adams, 1984).

This viewpoint is echoed in the work of Webster and Young. They argue that accuracy of recall and authenticity of specific detail is not a chief concern. Rather, it is the subjective meaning and relative importance the memory represents for individuals in their current context, which are of concern. They see this as a process through which individuals attribute meaning to the past in three interactive and overlapping steps. These are recall, evaluation, and synthesis. They suggest "painful memories necessitating ego defence activation are either accepted with great reservation (resigned acceptance) or rejected and ruminated over, perhaps contributing to a sense of despair (unaccepted)....Further, some memories will be associated with positive emotional connotations - happiness. pride, love - while

others will be affiliated with the converse, such as guilt, helplessness or hate" (Webster and Young, 1988). They further suggest that the practice of life review uses some of the conditions and techniques used in counselling .

Woods et al (1992) reviewed the literature, and the results of their own findings on reminiscence and life review work with this client group. They suggest that these activities are beneficial, and should form part of the assessment and care giving process by providers of care for dementing elderly people. They perceive this as an activity that can be accomplished during the time spent meeting patients' personal needs. It is probable that recalling the past may have positive effects on some elderly people with dementia. Kitwood (1989) suggests that there are "certain kinds of psychological 'strength' that may enable an individual to remain intact as a social and communicative being, despite the presence of pathological processes in the brain".

1.6 THE USE OF PSYCHOTHERAPEUTIC/COUNSELLING SKILLS IN REMINISCENCE THERAPY

Most literature concerned with the use of reminiscence therapy with psychogeriatric subjects, have generally applied this therapy to small groups of demented elderly people. Little has been outlined of the approach used by the group leaders/innovators/investigators of these groups (Adams, 1984; Cook, 1984; Goldwasser et al, 1987; Holland, 1987; Isohanni, 1990). This situation is now undergoing some change. Feil's Validation theory advocates the allowing of very old confused elderly to speak of their past, and the feelings they have, without

correcting them by the use of reality orientation therapy. In this approach one does not collude with the confused person by agreeing with what they are saying, but rather listening to what they are trying to say. Feil argues that understanding this message allows the confused elderly to resolve their past. She sees this stage as Resolution - the final life task. Feil sees humanistic psychology therapies as crucial in this work (Feil, 1985, 1992). Jones and Burns (1992) reminiscing disorientation theory, also follows much of the work of Feil, in that this approach validates feelings and permits the reorientation of the confused elderly person.

Farran and Keane-Hagerty (1989) have outlined basic communication skills that are necessary, when speaking to the demented elderly. They fail to describe these techniques as basic counselling skills, even though trained counsellors would readily recognise their advocated techniques as such. The literature outlining effective interviewing techniques stresses the importance of listening, observing absence of threat, role, presentation of self etc. (Berg, 1989; Chernitz, 1986; Hargie et al, 1981; Lofland and Lofland, 1984). Again, these are all part of effective counselling strategies. Feil (1982) suggests that use of Validation therapy as a therapeutic tool needs specific skills. She argues that it means listening with the third ear, seeing with the mind's eye, genuine empathetic touching, eye contact, and travelling with the very old, disorientated person. Goudie and Stokes (1989) follow the work of Feil in that they argue of a present, as opposed to past meaning, behind the 'confused' messages of the dementing elderly. They see the use of Rogerian counselling skills as crucial in allowing clients to 'resolve' their present needs or distress. Hausman (1992) advocates the use of dynamic psychotherapy with

individual demented elderly people. This approach focuses on the treatment of internal factors, which determine each older person's way of adapting and finding restitution within the demented state. Individual psychotherapy attempts to address and resolve internal stress. Many of the techniques used can be taught to care givers which will promote well-being for those people in their care.

Kitwood (1990a) writes convincingly of the need for a psychotherapeutic approach with this client group. He argues that the malignant social psychology (MSP) which surrounds the dementing process, is imposed on the personhood of older people who have neurological impairment. Psychotherapeutic interventions lead to the removal of MSP. Thus, we are left with an older person who is neurologically impaired. This impairment, he argues, may be better classified as a mental handicap rather than a mental illness. He further suggests that many of the skills used in the field of mental handicap are directly transferable to dementia care. It would appear, therefore, that allowing elderly people with dementia to talk of their meaningful past life experiences, within a therapeutic structure, can promote feelings of well-being. The pilot study which formed the basis for this present work produced similar findings.

1.7 THE PILOT STUDY

The Sample

This investigation was concerned with the ability of some demented elderly people to recall past life experiences. Although five elderly people had originally agreed to participate in the study, the eventual

number of informants who took part in this study were four. These were four elderly patients, three male and one female, who were medically diagnosed as suffering from moderate to severe dementia. They were patients in a long stay, twenty eight bedded psychogeriatric unit of a small psychiatric hospital. The unit presented as a warm, friendly, noisy environment with high levels of staff interaction. Patient's well-being seemed of paramount importance to the staff, who displayed attitudes of respect, patience and kindness to those in their care.

Method

A series of weekly individual interviews were held on the same day and, approximately, at the same time, in order to allow the elderly person to speak about his, or her, past experiences. There were, eventually, twenty one recorded and transcribed interviews. These interviews lasted from twenty minutes to one hour. The informants dictated the length of the interview, although they were drawn to a close when it became apparent that informants were tiring. Permission to undertake the interviews was sought and obtained from close relatives, the hospital consultant, nursing staff and the district research ethics committee. Since it was not possible to obtain permission from the elderly informant in advance, an invitation was extended on each occasion and the individual was free to participate or withdraw. The fifth informant did, in fact, choose to leave the study. On being asked if he would like to talk to the interviewer about his past life, he said, 'No!' very firmly and walked off. He died some weeks later.

In order to aid the investigation, some information about significant past events was obtained from staff in the setting and close relatives. This information was used as prompts and cues to aid retrieval of past memories. Information obtained from informants was reported back to close relatives in order to ascertain whether or not it was based upon real events. The approach used during the interviews combined Rogerian counselling skills, with the use of reminiscence/life review therapy with elderly dementia patients. The series of individual interviews with informants, in which they discussed/described their personal past, permitted the development of trust and security which is necessary for disclosure.

Analysis of Data

Transcripts of the interviews were subjected to analysis using grounded theory in which common emergent categories and themes were identified. These data were considered, together with field notes and ethnographic observations, in order to locate the behaviour of the informant in the context in which it occurred.

Findings

All informants managed to recollect significant past experiences concerned with significant others, places and events. Further analysis of the data indicated that not only could informants recall significant past memories, but also the appropriate emotions associated with these memories. That is, they displayed happiness during the recall of happier times and sadness when remembering unhappy events. This core category was labelled as appropriate affective response.

Staff enjoyed discussing the informant's past with the researcher, and were touched by the feelings displayed by all informants during the interviews. The senior charge nurse, who listened to some of the tapes, said that listening to informants talking in the privacy of his home, had given him a new perspective on his residents. He felt that it would be a good idea to record all residents on the ward and would be especially valuable for new staff. This investigation was too short to effect noticeable long term change in the informants. Theorists, such as Bromley (1966), Chertkow and Bub (1990), and Hanley and Hodge (1984) suggest that various measures, or indices of change in the behaviour of the confused elderly, do not readily lend themselves to the measurement of this type of intervention. However, short term change was noticeable with all informants. It was found that informants readily and openly shared their concerns, experiences, and feelings with the interviewer. Further, they appeared to enjoy/welcome the experience of talking about their past life to another person.

Discussion

This investigation indicated that some elderly people with dementia could recall their past, and reminisced. It further indicated the value of individual interviews with these informants, many of whom would have been unable to hear, or concentrate, on listening to another person with dementia.The importance of the use of counselling skills in this study cannot be overestimated. The strong emotions expressed by some informants could have been overwhelming without some knowledge of counselling strategies. A natural defence is to 'block' or deny strong feelings in others, if the recipient feels unable to cope with them. This investigation recommended increased training in use

of counselling skills amongst professional carers of older people with dementia.

This investigation further indicated that a more complete social history of each informant would have been useful. This was shown in the main body of the work, when additional information given on one informant, produced probes and cues which allowed her to remember much more of her past. She was also able to use whole sentences and keep to the subject under discussion. Furthermore, this informant found this final interview to be the most enjoyable of all the interviews (Mills and Chapman, 1992).

Perhaps the most significant finding in this work was the importance of memories and emotional response. The emotional memories of the informants ran like a rich vein throughout the investigation. This suggested that the emotional intactness of response in dementia was worthy of further investigation. It is probably fitting to close the discussion of this study with the words of one of the informants, Mr. Lamb, who described how he felt when speaking of his past experiences.

SL "And I tell you what! I felt happy when I was telling you about them!".

1.8 CONCLUSION

This chapter has clarified the background to this present investigation. The demographics of ageing have highlighted the numbers of elderly who have, and will have, some type of dementia.

The dementias, themselves, have been the subject some explanation, although the extent of the limitations of our present knowledge is painfully apparent. A discussion of psychotherapeutic interventions, especially with older people with dementia, indicates some interesting and beneficial lines of inquiry. The literature suggests that reminiscence is a useful tool in the work of dementia care, and can be combined with psychotherapy. The findings of the pilot investigation further suggest that there are some beneficial effects in the use of this combined approach (Mills and Chapman, 1992).

An examination of the present understanding of the dementias indicates how much entrenched positions and attitudes are changing. Dementia is no longer perceived as being an entirely negative state of being. It is now possible to argue that older people with dementia, can be enabled to retain/return to a state of personhood and well-being. It is not that the sufferers of dementia have changed, but rather it is we, as theorists, practitioners and providers of care, who have undergone a change in attitude and perceptions.

The key to this sea change is a greater understanding of these illnesses, their management, and the shattered personhood of most older people with dementia. As Kitwood and Bredin (1992) remind us, it is we who often have more of a problem than those in need of care, for we simply participate in the unacknowledged 'pathology of normality'. Those older people who exist in a state of dementia, often exist in a state of greater authenticity than those who care for them. The demented person who stands before us is a simply devastated, but highly sentient being (Kitwood, 1990a).

It is suggested that a growing understanding of another is linked to the sharing of emotions. Denzin (1989a) argues that this lies at the centre of the process of understanding. Possibly, the commonality linking dementia, reminiscence therapies, and psychotherapeutic interventions, may be centred in the expression, acceptance, and understanding of emotion and emotional responses. This issue will be explored in greater depth during chapter two of this work, together with a discussion of the relationship between emotion and memory processes in dementia.

CHAPTER TWO

EMOTION AND AUTOBIOGRAPHICAL MEMORY IN DEMENTIA:

2.1 INTRODUCTION

This chapter is concerned with a discussion of the developing emotional life in older people with dementia, together with the relationship between memory and emotion. This is not a simple task, due to present incomplete knowledge and understanding. Within the discipline of cognitive psychology, emotions, per se, have received little interest. However, there is a growing literature on the relationship between emotion and cognition. Moreover, the relationship between memory and emotion has been the topic of extensive research, although largely devoted to the relationship between negative emotions, memory, and neuroses.

In addition, studies of dementia have largely been concerned with the failure of memory. There is little in the literature which seeks to combine the phenomena of emotion and memory in dementia. However, there has been substantial research in brain structures associated with memory processes. Further, there is a rising interest in the role of autobiographical memory. It is this aspect of memory which is deemed to contain emotional memories of a personal past.

This chapter will, therefore, discuss emotion theories, and the theoretical relationship between cognition and emotion. However, the main focus of this chapter will be concerned with theory and research gained from studies on the effects of dementia in brain structures concerned with memory processes, together with a discussion of

theories of autobiographical memory and the implications for this study.

2.2 THE EMOTIONS

The emotions have traditionally been associated with the Arts. Their influence in such areas as literature, painting, sculpture and music, is manifest. Psychoanalytic/counselling work, too, is concerned with emotions that are part of problematic events in a person's life. In these contexts, a wide range of emotions is expected to be displayed, and experienced. In many of these instances, a full understanding of the psychology of emotions is not always necessary. The subjective/experiential component of emotions is normally sufficient. However, within a more scientific context such perspectives require further explanation. There have been many attempts to attach theoretical understanding to the emotions. Theorists have endeavoured to explain their development and function from a physiological stance (Ekman, 1984; James-Lange, 1895; Tomkins, 1984; Watson and Morgan, 1917).

The emotions are also regarded as numerous and varied social constructs, who owe their existence to the influence of culture, social experience, and learning (Averill, 1986; Harrè, 1986), Other theorists regard them as psychoevolutionary and fundamental to all human beings (Izard, 1991; Plutchik, 1980). The phylogeny and ontogeny of emotions would indicate that emotions have evolved because of their adaptive functions in the instinct for survival, which is the basis for all aspects of human behaviour (Darwin, 1872). It is the strength of this instinct which forms part of psychoanalytic theory (Freud, 1920),

and which suggests that survival and the emotions are intertwined. Thus, a living human being is an emotional being (Izard,1991).

Theoretical arguments suggest that dementia sufferers have a rich and powerful emotional life (Kitwood, 1993). Moreover, it is suggested that these emotions are not merely labile, but recognisable states that seemingly correspond to present experiences and events (Mills and Walker, 1994). However, much of the literature associates dementia with emotional problems. These include disinhibition and blunting of emotions, together with a lability of emotions and lack of self control (Bromley, 1990; Williams, 1987). Kitwood & Bredin (1992) suggest that many of the behaviours seen in older people with dementia, which include emotional issues, are more of a problem for their non demented carers and others. Further, they perceive sufferers of dementia as being 'generally more authentic' about their emotions. This, too, was a finding from the pilot study (Mills, 1991), in that all informants who took part showed honest emotions related to the topic under discussion. Further, there was little evidence of marked disinhibition and lack of self control during any of the interviews with informants.

In the search for appropriate theory to offer some explanation for the presence of emotions in older people with dementia, it is necessary to specify the dominant characteristics associated with this area. In this particularly study, emotion theory must seek to account for the presence and durability of emotions in older people with dementia. Thus, the 'how' and the 'why' of their existence is of importance. At present there are over a hundred theories on emotion (Thompson, 1988). The theory of emotions which is applicable, and most suitable,

in this context is the psychoevolutionary perspective which states that emotions are fundamental and are deemed to be derived through evolutionary-biological processes (Izard, 1991; Plutchik, 1980; Tomkins, 1981). However, the social construct theory of emotions cannot be lightly dismissed. Emotions are learned and shaped through societal influences, but, it is argued, are not solely created within such interactions.

Moreover, it is suggested that emotions, in evolutionary terms, emerged prior to increased cognition. Tomkins (1981) argues that emotions are strongly present in the neonate who, at this time, has immature cognitive processes. This theory is of interest to this work, leading to the suggestion that the fading of cognitive abilities within dementia might precede the fading of emotional structures. It is further argued that fundamental emotions have a distinct and specific feeling that achieves awareness. The fundamental emotions that meet these, and other criteria, are interest, enjoyment, surprise, sadness, anger, disgust, contempt, fear, shame and guilt (Izard, 1991). If this theory is correct, it is these emotions which will be found to exist in older people with dementia.

Emotions may be viewed as a tripartite system of neurophysiological-biological, motor or behavioural-expressive, and subjective-experiential components. Generally, theories which seek to explain emotions more in neurophysiological terms, stress the effect that an external event will have on an individual with regard to bodily responses, particularly specific avoidance or approach reactions, together with responses of the autonomic nervous system (Mandler, 1987). Current thinking suggests that the facial feedback hypothesis

might fill the information gap left by a purely visceral theory of emotion (Lazarus, 1991). This argues that response to a prototypic event triggers facial and postural responses which, in turn, trigger both the emotional state and the autonomic responses (Ekman et al, 1972, p.173). These theories of arousal include the functionality of neuroendocrine systems, which produces a hormonal response to stimuli. Nathan (1988) argues that hormones both form behaviours and are formed by behaviours, in that they produce needs and desires which do not occur until the particular hormone reaches the brain. In turn, behaviour influences the brain and this affects the secretion of hormones.

All emotions, however expressed, are founded in brain structures, which, according to Siminov (1986), comprise of a system of highly complex and interrelated interdependent structures, with many of their functions, as yet, unknown (Luria, 1973). Moreover, the emotional circuitry of the brain is still poorly understood (Thompson, 1988), and it is unwise to perceive the emotions as being a function of particular locations in the brain, for, as Buck (1988, p. 569.) argues, the nervous system is so interconnected that no structure works in isolation. However, cognitive psychological theory posits a relationship between the emotions and cognition, and which is of interest in the study of emotions and memory in dementia.

2.3 EMOTIONS AND COGNITION

The apparent differentiation between cognition and emotion has long been recognised, within a cognitive psychological framework, as a false divide. For many years, within the cognitive psychological

discipline, emotions were seen as the result of cognitive appraisal. The emotional feeling was experienced and labelled accordingly. (Schachter and Singer, 1962). Lazarus (1982, 1984a) perceives cognitive appraisal as an integral feature of all emotional states, although Zajonc (1980, 1984a, 1984b) argues for the supremacy of emotions over cognition: "affect and cognition are separate and partially independent systems and....although they function conjointly, affect could be generated without a prior cognitive process" (Zajonc, 1984b, p.117.). This theory is of interest to this investigation, in that emotions may be seen, in some circumstances, to have a certain freedom from cognitive appraisal and processes.

Emotion and Memory

Further arguments linking cognition and emotion have been hypothesised in the network theory of affect (Bower, 1981; Bower and Cohen, 1982; Gilligan and Bower, 1984). Their theory indicates that emotional nodes in memory structures, connected to cognitive structures, will be 'triggered' by similar emotional stimuli such as mood. Blaney (1986), in a review of the collected evidence presented for both mood-state-dependent recall and mood-congruence, finds that there is an argument for mood congruence effects as against that of mood-state-dependent recall, "what seems clear is that there exist either mood-congruence effects or state-dependence effects disguised as such, the former being the more likely of the two". Other reviews of the evidence also confirm some mood-congruency effects in a clinical context (Baddeley, 1990; Williams et al, 1988).

A convincing explanation of the inconsistency in mood-congruent

retrieval effects is given by Williams et al (1988). They suggest that not all material encoded during these experiments was concerned with reference to the self. Further, both Isen et al (1978) and Teasdale and Russell (1983) used self referent material and found evidence of mood-congruent recall. In reports of experiments Bower (1981), Bower et al (1981), and Hasher et al (1985) did not use self referent material, and no effect of mood-congruent recall bias could be demonstrated.

The research on mood-congruent effects in memory has largely been in a clinical context with depressed or highly anxious patients, and has shown mixed results. Williams et al (1988, p.166.) suggest that emotional disorders bias cognitive processing. They conclude that, "attention is biased, memory is biased, and judgments are biased". It appears that different emotions may be more specific on cognitive processing than was originally thought. They suggest that one possible interpretation of the data is that anxious subjects orientate their attention to threat. Depressed subjects may selectively remember negative material (Williams et al, 1988, p.168.). Baddeley (1990) indicates support for these arguments. Further, some findings from the pilot study, which preceded this investigation, indicated that there was some evidence of mood congruent recall in dementia. Again, the recalled memories of the informant were largely negative when mood was low (Mills & Walker, 1994).

Other theorists who adopt a less cognitive stance to the relationship between cognition and emotion include Singer (1973, 1974), who posits the concept of interrelated/intertwined systems of cognition and emotion. This relationship is rooted in the infant's early efforts at accommodation to its novel and ever-changing environment. Thus,

emotional and cognitive processes are intertwined from birth. This intertwined relationship will, in some instances, allow emotional processes to function independently (Izard, 1971, 1984, 1991; Leventhal, 1984; Tomkins, 1962, 1963, 1981;Zajonc, 1980, 1984b). Thus, within cognitive psychology there is an embryonic framework that links thinking to feelings (Averill, 1986; Lazarus, 1982, 1984b). This framework includes the relationship between mood and memory and, as has been discussed, led to the formulation of cognitive approaches in emotional disorders (Teasdale & Barnard, 1993). Williams et al (1988) suggest that theorists recognise the need for further progress to be made in understanding how perception, attention, and memory contribute to this phenomena.

There is, therefore, within the cognitive school of thought, a posited association between memory and emotion (Averill, 1986; Baddeley, 1990; Bower, 1981; Bower and Cohen, 1982; Eysenck and Keane, 1990; Gilligan and Bower, 1984; Leventhal, 1984; Teasdale & Barnard 1993; Williams et al, 1988). There appears to be no significant body of literature associating cognitive impairment with emotion, other than emotional disorders. However, there has been substantial research in the loss of memory due to cognitive impairment as the result of trauma, or congenital influences. Such studies include the effects of dementia on brain structures and processes, known to be associated with the learning, storage and retrieval of information.

Moreover, the loss of memory in dementia continues to decline as neurones cease to function. The progressive nature of dementia eventually affects all aspects of cognitive functioning. The timespan for this rate of decline is, as has been discussed, variable. Reisberg

(1983) suggests that there are six phases in the dementing process. These range from very mild cognitive decline (forgetfulness), moderate cognitive decline (late confusional) and finally, to very severe cognitive decline (late dementia). Diagnosis tends to become more common at the confusional stage. Studies indicate that, with most patients, the confusional stage heralded further decline, with institutionalisation, and not infrequently, death within a subsequent 2-5 year period (Reisberg, 1983). Similar findings are reported by Shapiro and Tate (1991).

However, the stage at which mood changes occur in dementia is the subject of some dispute, particularly with regard to Alzheimer's disease (Bayles, 1991). Reisberg (1983) suggests that emotional changes are more typical of the latter stages of dementia, and are associated with severe cognitive impairment. Other theorists suggest that disturbances of mood are usual (Lishman, 1978), together with dysphoria (Merriam et al, 1988). Nonetheless, most theorists agree that mood change is common in dementia, but typically appear subsequent to memory dysfunction (Bayles, 1991).

2.4 MEMORY AND DEMENTIA

The brief description of brain changes associated with dementia given in chapter one, suggest that this group of diseases present with no standard cognitive profile, but will always include an impairment of learning and retrieval of memory in verbal and non verbal domains, (Damasio et al, 1990). Further, it is a disease of neuronal death that is selective or modular in nature. These neuronal networks include the hippocampal formations which are known to be closely involved

in retrieval and recall. It must be stated, however, that the hippocampal formation is not the seat of memory traces, but appears to be an important substrate for memory processes. Squire (1992) argues that it is, however, a complex structure which performs a critical function at the time of learning, if declarative memory is to be established in an enduring and usable way.

In early DAT, atrophic changes have been associated with the medial temporal lobes that particularly disrupt the hippocampus and hippocampal cortical links. Mayes (1992) and Parkin (1993) suggest that these atrophic changes contribute to memory loss within these illnesses. Squire (1992) further indicates that the CA1 region of the hippocampus is particularly vulnerable to ischemic damage. His recent studies on global ischemia in the hippocampal formation in the rat and monkey, found evidence of selective neuronal loss in the CA1 region, together with memory impairment (Zola-Morgan and Squire, 1990; Squire, 1992). This, of course, has implications for multi-infarct damage associated with MID.

Moscovitch and Umiltà (1990) and Squire (1992) suggest that gradual reorganisation of memory storage occurs, so that storage and retrieval is eventually possible without the participation of the hippocampus, or related structures. As the result of gradual processes that are still poorly understood, the organisation of memory storage is slowly transformed after learning. This transformation may involve rehearsal, additional retrieval opportunities, or the acquisition of related material. It may possibly be largely endogenous. Squire (1992) argues that concurrent changes in neocortex ensure possible re-representation of material in a more efficient form.

In addition, Moscovitch and Umiltà (1990, p.41.) argue that "there is a non hippocampal route to memory traces that also uses working memory. Subsequently, alternate routes to those traces can be established that use central processes, or the traces can be revived and their content delivered to working memory, by newly established automatic associations for frequently retrieved pieces of information".

Squire (1992) offers some support for this argument, in that work with experimental animals provides direct evidence that the hippocampal formation is essential for memory storage for only a limited period of time. The role of the hippocampus then gradually diminishes, and a more permanent memory is established elsewhere that is independent of the hippocampus. These arguments are of some significance for this work, in that they offer a possible explanation of how some older people with moderate to severe dementia can recall some meaningful memories of the past. Further, Mills (1991), Mills and Chapman (1992), and Mills and Coleman (1994) suggest that these recalled meaningful memories of dementia sufferers are significantly emotional.

The hippocampal formation is part of the limbic system. Van Hoesen and Damasio (1987) indicate that limbic neuropathology within DAT is not confined to the hippocampus, but also to the entorhinal cortex and amygdala. The area that would appear to be most severely compromised, however, is the nuclei closely interconnected with the hippocampal formation. Damasio (1989a, 1989b) and Damasio et al (1990) argue that there is also neuropathologic involvement in the basal forebrain, together with the nucleus basalis of Meynert. It is possible that changes in the basal forebrain may be secondary to

primary changes in the cerebral cortex. Damage to higher order cortices indicates that feedback projections to other, less recent, brain structures are critical for recall, recognition, and consciousness.

Thus, the defect in retrieval of past events is not merely due to dysfunction in the hippocampal complex, but largely to dysfunction in higher order association cortices (Damasio et al, 1990). However, these affected cortical areas are still permitted to function for long periods during the course of the disease. Again, a comment that has some significance for this present investigation.

It is possible to see from these stated theoretical approaches, that old memories may be perceived to undergo different retrieval processes compared to those of more recent memories. Moscovitch and Umiltà (1990) suggest that if these memories were of a frequent experience, and/or often recalled, then the process would be relatively rapid and automatic as it travelled well established non hippocampal pathways.

The cortex has approximately, some 10^{10} neurones with perhaps, more than 10^{4} synapses for each neurone (Rose, 1987). Further, according to Parkin (1987), a fully developed neurone can average over a thousand dendritic and a thousand axonal synapses, which gives some indication of the enormity of the level of interconnections between neurones. Thus, it is probable that there may exist any number of pathways and circuits, which can be modified through neuronal plasticity, by the functioning of learning and experience. (Parkin, 1987). Further, the complexities of this vast system suggest that it may be tentatively possible to visualise, within dementia, the

use of alternative emotional/cognitive networks, to long term memories that have remained intact, despite inhibiting changes to neural structures and pathways.

Aspects of Long Term Memory

The discussion of memory processes involving a non hippocampal pathway, suggests that the memories which will travel this route are more likely to be well established or long term memories. Within early dementia, there are more noticeable deficits in short term memory (STM), although long term memory (LTM), itself, will eventually show signs of decline. Long term memory can be seen as encompassing two memory systems, that of episodic and semantic memory (Tulving, 1983). Episodic memory can be generally categorised as a store of the record of individual life events, the autobiography. These types of memory are therefore, temporally dated. Semantic memory may be seen as memory organisations that hold known facts about the world, such as concepts, facts and vocabulary. It has no necessary temporal landmarks. Bayles and Kaszniak (1987) suggest that loss in this area of memory is widely considered to be central to the communication problems experienced within later DAT.

Chertkow and Bub (1990) indicate that there is evidence to suggest that a semantic processing deficit exists within DAT, with significant loss of conceptual knowledge. This study further supports the concept of a multiple semantic memory model, although this issue is contentious (Riddoch and Humphreys, 1987; Riddoch et al 1988). However, Parkin (1987, p. 136.) suggests that, although both STM and LTM function are disrupted within AD, episodic memory would

appear to suffer greater disruption than that of semantic memory

Conway (1990) and Tulving (1983) suggest that a possible explanation for these differing arguments is that memory of past events is represented at both episodic and semantic levels, as these two systems are perceived to closely interact. Thus autobiographical material may be represented in both episodic and semantic systems. Emotion is more closely associated with episodic memory, in that emotional experiences are personal events. Moreover, an emotional state may be induced by reading or other methods of acquiring information, thus, the semantic content may be accompanied by "an episodic affect" (Tulving, 1983, p.43.).

It is, of course, possible for memory of events to be low in emotional content. However, studies suggest that autobiographical memories are closely intertwined with knowledge of emotion (Conway, 1990). The difference between these two types of memory would appear to be that memory of events (episodic) can be associated with low levels of emotion, and memory of personal events (autobiographical) is more likely to be associated with high levels of emotion. The timespan of these types of memories indicates further characteristic differences. Episodic memory may only last a few days, whereas autobiographical memory can last for many years (Conway, 1990).

2.5 AUTOBIOGRAPHICAL MEMORY

Current interest amongst cognitive psychologists in the study of autobiographical memory is a comparatively recent phenomenon, for, as Robinson (1992) indicates, data were regarded as anecdotal in

nature and unable to satisfy the requirements of objective science. This debate still continues, but with an ever increasing proliferation of interest in this area of memory.

The area of autobiographical memory may be seen as part of the memory system as a whole. The preceding discussion will have indicated that autobiographical memory is not a separate or distinct type of memory, but a memory for biographical information and life experiences. Robinson (1992, p.224.) suggests that this type of memory comprises of several qualitatively different memoria, such as general versus specific. Conway (1990) also perceives autobiographical, but not episodic, memory as possessing sub-divisions.

Brewer (1986) suggests that all autobiographical memory is memory of information relating to the self. He further identifies four sub-divisions or types of autobiographical memory. He perceives them as being self referent, and interpretations of complex events. Johnson (1983, 1985) offers a model of at least three basic memory sub-systems: the sensory, perceptual, and reflective. His multiple entry (MEM) approach proposes that all memories are represented in the various sub-systems. Autobiographical memories, therefore, suggest a pattern of distinguishing characteristics which can be shared with other types of knowledge, although most clearly typifying autobiographical memories.

Conway (1990, p.14.) identifies seven such characteristics, most of which are strongly present within such memories. Perhaps the most important of these is the characteristic of self reference, for

autobiographical memories are significantly concerned with the self (Brewer, 1986). Another characteristic, the experience of remembering is, according to Conway, always present, as is context specific, sensory and perceptual attributes. Yet another characteristic identified by Conway, is the duration of these types of memories. Autobiographical memories can, and will, exist for years. The length of autobiographical memory is of some significance in this present investigation, in that informants are of a great age. Thus, any personal memories they might have of the past will be of many years standing.

Conway perceives the characteristic of interpretation (personal), as being frequently present, together with imagery. Veridicality, however, is variable. It is suggested that autobiographical memories represent interpretations or meanings of experienced events. Neisser (1981) demonstrates this quite clearly in his account of the testimony of Nixon's aide, John Dean, concerning the Watergate affair. He suggests that when Dean was wrong in the accuracy of his recall, there was a sense of truthfulness in what he was saying. He did recall the common themes of conversations, but reconstructed them into inaccurate memories of single events. Thus, Dean had faulty recall for isolated incidents, but he certainly remembered the 'message' of Watergate.

Bartlett (1932, p.204.) would support this finding, for he proposed that memory was fundamentally reconstructive as "literal recall is extraordinarily unimportant". However, Brewer (1986) suggests that memory is only partly reconstructive for, as Conway points out, memory is certainly reconstructive but there must be something with

which to construct (Conway, 1990, p.25.).

Perhaps it is now possible to ask which memories of the self are more likely to be encoded. Research indicates that it is distinctive events as opposed to routine happenings which are more likely to be recalled (Conway, 1990; Linton, 1982). This was, again, a finding from the pilot study. Significant events concerning the self were recalled by all informants (Mills, 1991). Conway (1990, p.104.) argues that the emotional intensity and personal significance of an event give rise to autobiographical memories, which are detailed, highly available for recall and comparatively resistant to forgetting. This statement has significance for this present investigation for it suggests that emotional memories have a great strength. It further indicates that some emotional memories may well survive for long periods in the course of dementia.

Conway (1990, p.164.) further suggests that autobiographical memory is hierarchical in nature. Within this structure, knowledge about activities, people and places are focal points for memory. It will be recalled that the categories assigned to memories of informant's in the pilot study, closely followed these themes. Bromley (1990, p.233.) also perceives autobiographical memories as strongly associated with emotional significance which have been organised into schema, in ways that permit ready access.

Autobiographical memories, therefore, have an interdependency with cognition and emotion. Again, findings from the pilot study suggest that this interdependency would appear to be

maintained for long periods within the dementing process. This interdependency was present in different types of medically diagnosed dementia, such as multi-infarct dementia (Mills, 1991; Mills and Coleman, 1994), and in dementia of the Alzheimer's type (Mills 1993; Mills and Walker, 1994).

Autobiographical memories in old age are of particular importance to this present work. Further, memories of a personal past are associated with reminiscence, which has been the subject of much discussion in the preceding chapter. Salaman (1970, 1982) suggests that these memories may be adaptive in that they provide a sense of self and/or support in times of stress. These memories can be involuntary or spontaneous. Some may be the detailed recall of whole events, whereas others may be fragmented pieces of the past. Salaman further suggests that fragmentary 'factual' knowledge is not spontaneously or involuntarily recalled.

Conway (1990) develops this concept further by suggesting that what is meant by this statement is that these snippets of factual knowledge are not accompanied by a feeling of remembering. Other types of knowledge can be known to be so strongly remembered as to allow the person to momentarily relive past experiences. This, again, was a finding from the pilot study. Occasionally, informants appeared to be able to see their very old, past emotional experiences with great clarity (Mills, 1991).

Salaman (1982) strongly suggests that autobiographical memories carry personally relevant meanings, and it is these meanings which are so important. In maturity these meanings may become clearer and

resolution may occur following a period of life review which, again, was the subject of discussion in the preceding chapter.

Conway suggests that: "It seems likely that the purpose of the life review, and the role of autobiographical memory in this process, are determined more by the existential problems set by the past and nature of current circumstances, than by any predetermined cognitive process" (Conway, 1990, p.157.). Thus, the role of emotion in recalling the past has been given some prominence in recent research.

2.6 CONCLUSION

The discussion of the emotions, together with a discussion of emotion and memory in dementia has indicated the scarcity of the literature that actually pertains to these topics. For the purposes of this investigation, it has been necessary to define emotions from a simplistic stance, in order to aid clarity. The many theories concerned with the emotions are not particularly helpful in the study of emotions in dementia. However, the psychoevolutionary theories on emotion do offer some insight in to the presence of emotions in older people with dementia. Further, the concept of a named and specific number of fundamental emotions is also helpful, in that it will be possible to seek for their existence during this investigation. The establishment of their presence in older people with dementia will give some indication of the strength of these emotions, which will have endured in spite of neurophysiological changes to brain processes and structures.

There is progressive neural damage associated with dementia.

However, it is, not yet known how much neural damage individuals can tolerate before brain function is compromised. Further, function will continue, albeit defectively, rather than not at all (Damasio et al, 1990). Although structures and processes which are known to be associated with memory processes, such as the hippocampal formation, are eventually overwhelmed by this illness, there is some evidence that there is a non hippocampal pathway which is involved in the laying down of long term memories (Moscovitch and Umiltà, 1990). The posited existence of such a pathway has important implications for this investigation. Informants may have memories of events that happened many years ago.

Some of these memories may fall into the category of autobiographical memory. Theoretical suggestions that emotion and memory have an intertwined and interdependent relationship leads to the importance of present interest in autobiographical memory. It is this concept of the recall of memories relating to the self which is of significance for this study. Chapter one of this work describes the use of reminiscence theory and reminiscence work in some detail. Reminiscence and autobiographical memory are, of course, closely intertwined. Further, the pilot study which preceded this investigation used reminiscence as an approach to aid informant recall. It would seem that theories relating to autobiographical memory offer further support for the use of this intervention.

Conway (1990) suggests that autobiographical memories may be emotional. Further, they possess some durability and are comparatively resistant to forgetting. They are also concerned with memories of the self. Life review and psychotherapeutic interventions

are also concerned with emotional memories of the self. It would seem, therefore, that there is a relationship between emotion and memory, which is made evident in the recall of a personal past. It is posited that this relationship between memory and emotion will also be found in older people with dementia, and made evident through the autobiographical memories, or personal stories of the past, of those who take part in this study.

Thus, the phenomena of dementia, memory and emotion have been shown to have a common meeting place, both theoretically and therapeutically, within the recall of autobiographical memories, or life story. This chapter suggests that the emotions associated with this life story continue throughout life, throughout old age, and possibly even throughout dementia.

CHAPTER THREE

THE METHOD: CASE-STUDIES AND GROUNDED THEORY

3.1 INTRODUCTION

The aim of this investigation is to investigate the characteristic features of emotional memories in older people with dementia. The pilot investigation, as described in chapter one of this work, indicated that all informants who took part had many meaningful emotional memories available for recall. Their memories of past events held both personal significance and emotional intensity. This study was, however, small and took place over a period of three months. The present investigation was larger and it was designed to take place over a twelve to eighteen month timespan. Characteristic features of emotional memories amongst informants would be studied, therefore, in greater depth.

Consequently, the research aims are focussed on an area which has a unique singularity, for memories themselves and their associated emotions are the particular property of individual people. In addition, dementia presents with no standard cognitive profile. Sufferers of this disease present differently, they themselves are singular. Thus, this is a study of individuals, and of individual phenomena.

A suitable methodology should encompass this concept of individuality. Further, it should permit a close examination of informant's recollections of their past lives, and of the moving stories they told. A review of the literature suggested that the most appropriate methodology for this particular investigation, might be

that of the single case-study method. This chapter, therefore, will discuss the strengths and weaknesses of case-study methodology and its appropriate use in this present investigation.

Further, much of the failure, or success, of this study depended on the level of interviewer skill. Consequently, it is relevant to make a brief personal statement concerning my own professional background and interest in this area of research. This will take place prior to an examination of the methods used to analyse the data generated from the investigation. This will then be followed by a review of the ethical issues surrounding the inquiry. There will also be a short discussion concerning the sample of older people with dementia, who took part. Finally, there will be an examination of the procedures used during the collection, analysis, and presentation of data.

3.2 THE CASE-STUDY METHOD

The single case-study method, according to Runyan (1982, p.121.) involves the presentation and interpretation of detailed information about a single individual. It is an in-depth investigation of a single person, which, suggests McAdams (1990, p.28.) and Yin (1989) can be conducted over a substantial period of time. This method, therefore, is idiographic, as opposed to nomethetic. Allport (1937) and Runyan (1982, p.175.) suggest this method is concerned with that which is particular and specific to the individual, rather than a search for general laws arising from studies of large samples or groups.

Case-study methodology, according to Runyan (1982, p.152.) can effectively portray the social and historical world that the person is

living in. Yin (1989, p.14.) argues that it permits an investigation to retain the holistic and meaningful characteristics of real-life events. Further, it can illuminate the causes (and meanings) of relevant events, experiences and conditions. Indeed, Campbell (1975, p.179.) states that the case study may be the only route to knowledge of human behaviour and experience, "noisy, fallible and biased though it may be".

Bromley (1990, p.324.) perceives the case-study as more concerned with a single segment or major episode in the life course. Bromley, therefore, does not accept the wider definition of the case-study. He regards this long term approach as the life-history method. However, for Rosenthal (1993, p.61.) life story and life history are continuously and dialectically linked. They produce each other.

Yin (1989, p.23.) suggests that the case-study should be regarded as an empirical inquiry that: investigates a contemporary phenomenon within its real life context; when the boundaries between phenomenon and context are not clearly evident; and in which multiple sources of evidence are used. Further, case-studies may be exploratory, descriptive or explanatory, with a wide degree of overlap between these characteristics.

Theoretical considerations concerning qualitative methods suggest that case-study methods might be wholly qualitative in nature. However, Yin (1989) argues that case-studies, including those of this present investigation, may be based entirely on quantitative evidence. This investigation is concerned with the application of psychotherapeutic interventions. An appropriate method, therefore,

might be that of the experimental single case-study. This would involve the establishment of baseline behaviours for informants, applying treatment, and testing for post-treatment effects.

Equally, computer assisted methods of content analysis might be helpful in establishing changes that occurred throughout the series of interviews, with particular reference to the relationship between cognitive contents and the associated emotional reactions. Such an analysis would generate quantitative measures and might reveal some sort of trend over time. Thus, the methodology would incorporate both qualitative and quantitative measures.

Case-study methods may, therefore, be both qualitative and/or quantitative in nature. Runyan (1982) suggests that the structure of life history narrative can be explored from many different perspectives. Indeed, Yin (1989) argues that the case-study as a research tool, is distinct from other research strategies. He suggests that it is possible to view this approach as a separate methodology which has a clearly defined structure and specified procedures.

Criticisms of the Case-Study method

Case-study methodology has a controversial history. It has been widely used for many years in a variety of settings and disciplines, but its value for scientific investigation has been questioned by Kratochwill (1978), Kazdin (1980), and Liebert and Spiegler (1978) among others. It has been argued that case-study methodology is non scientific, there can be lack of rigorous methodology (Yin, 1989). Critics of case-study methodology, such as Kratochwill (1978), have

also suggested that it is an impressionistic and non-verifiable method.

Further criticisms of case-study research include biased data. Case-studies may be reports on a single individual by another. Thus, as Runyan (1982, p.151.) suggests, these reports can contain biased interpretations or inferences. However, Rosenthal (1966) and Yin (1989) point out that bias may also enter in experimental methodology.

Runyan (1982, p.124.) suggests that case-studies are further perceived to have low internal and external validity. The single case-study provides little basis for generalisation. Yin (1989, p.21.) theorises that the criteria involved in the problem of generalisation within the single case-study method, might also apply to a single experiment. He argues that scientific facts are normally based on a multiple set of experiments which have replicated the same phenomena under different conditions. This leads him to suggest that case-studies, like experiments, are generalisable to theoretical propositions, and not to populations or universes. In this sense, the case-study, like the experiment, is not representative of a 'sample'. Further, the investigator's goal within a case-study, is to expand and generalise theories, not to calculate the number of particular occurrences.

A further criticism of this approach is that it is all too easy to produce a bad case-study. The production of an exemplary case-study certainly requires the following of methodological procedures. However, it also requires insight and interpretation of human processes. Yin (1989) suggests that it is this insight which

differentiates the exemplary case-study from those with a less discerning content.

General Characteristics of Good Case-Studies

Runyan (1982) suggests that there is a necessity to consider methods which will improve case-study methodology. Yin (1989) posits five general characteristics of an exemplary case study. Many of his concepts are included in the suggestions advocated by Bromley (1986, p.24-25.). Bromley's guidelines are, however, more specific. Bromley suggests six rules which should be followed in the writing of a psychological case-study. These rules are based on ten procedural points, concerned with ten kinds of information about any individual who features in such a case-study. Bromley suggests the use of a quasi-judicial procedure, in the preparation of a psychological case-study. This allows the evidence, inferences, and arguments presented in a case-study, to undergo a critical examination by others.

It is this critical examination which permits the adoption of the principle of falsification, as proposed by Popper (1980). A case-study is, by its very nature, high in informative content and, as such, is high in the number of ways its conclusions can be shown to be unjustified. Popper (1980) argues that highly falsifiable statements/theories are also highly testable. Magee (1985) suggests that it is this testing of conjectures in an attempt to refute them, that leads to advance in science.

This concept is not free of criticism. Baddeley (1992) argues that many concepts and models are fruitful, without being in the final analysis,

testable. He points out that in the field of cognitive psychology, it is often possible to generate many parallel interpretations of phenomena. In principle, each of these interpretations is testable, but the lack of adequate techniques does not allow the principles of falsification to be applied. Baddeley's comments, however, would appear to be more concerned with practicalities than refutation of principle.

It seems appropriate, therefore, to consider the concept of falsification, in conjunction with the use of the information rich case-studies of this particular investigation. Throughout this particular study, the investigator acted as a researcher and as an interviewer. Hawker (1982) suggests that these roles both complete, but also compete. Further, it is in this presentation of results that the final interplay between the researcher and the interviewer occurs, and encourages the reader to consider their validity. It was felt that the following of Bromley's (1986, 1990) precepts, where possible, would allow a greater stringency, structure, and internal coherence to this work. It further permits a strong scrutiny of the evidence, and of the interpretations offered by the researcher.

Bromley's precepts, or six basic rules for the preparation of a psychological case-study, suggested that all case-studies prepared for this investigation should be reported truthfully and accurately, with clear aims and objectives. They should also contain an evaluative element in which the extent of the achievement of the aims and objectives will be discussed. Bromley further suggests that if the inquiry deals with episodes of deep emotional significance to the person, then the investigator should be someone who is trained and

equipped to establish and manage a fairly long, and possibly difficult relationship. This was an important precept for this investigation. It was anticipated that the single case-studies would contain many memories of emotional events. Further, individual relationships with informants were to be of long duration. The acceptance of the researcher's background and training by the psychogeriatrician and managers of the setting, indicate that this precept was met. Details of the researcher, and acceptance by the setting, are discussed more fully in the sections concerned with the personal statement and ethical considerations.

A further precept suggests that it is of great importance that the informants be understood in the context of their specific historical, social, and symbolic world. Finally, Bromley suggests that this knowledge of the informants must be written in good plain English, as objectively and directly as possible without, however, losing human interest as a story. This task should be accomplished with sympathy and imagination, and with due regard for high standards of evidence and argument (Bromley, 1986, p. 24-25.).

Bromley seeks to establish a more scientific approach to case-study methods. McAdams (1990 p.108.) argues that scientists judge theories according to the criteria of comprehensiveness; parsimony; coherence; testability; empirical validity; usefulness and generativity. He suggests that if these criteria are adopted, then a good case-study should take into consideration a comprehensive body of case information; should be simple and straight forward; show internal coherence and consistency; provide hypotheses of human behaviour which is empirically testable; is in accord with documented valid empirical

studies; is useful and generates new ideas. Light (1980, p.195.) suggests a taxonomy of six types of case-studies. These are an analytic case-study focussing on an individual's psychological history and psychodynamics; a diagnostic case-study which is concerned with issues of differential diagnosis; a neurological case-study which focusses on neurological problems; a therapeutic case-study which is concerned with the process and problems of conducting therapy with an individual; an administrative case-study which would centre on administrative problems; and a discharge case-study which would be concerned with discharge issues, such as alternatives and plans for an individual's life or treatment, after hospital discharge. Runyan (1982) further suggests it is possible to have an evaluative case-study which would focus on assessment of the effects of treatment.

Case-Study Design Applied to this Investigation

Case-studies may be experimental or naturalistic, but all may have three foci. These foci are the assessment-formulation of the problem, either in terms of a current baseline and/or a reconstruction of its origin and course through life history; a description of the treatment processes, techniques used and of the interactions between client and therapist; or an assessment of the effects of treatment (Runyan, 1982, p.146.). These focal points were the basis of all case-studies used in this study, although emphasis varied. Points one and two were seen as more significant than point three. Runyan (1982) suggests that the difference between single case experimental designs and naturalistic case-studies is the relatively different emphasis within an array of possible goals.

It is probable that no one category adequately describes the specific type of naturalistic case-study used during this investigation. An examination of the aims of this study, and the broad based descriptors given by Yin (1989) suggests that the single case-studies pertaining to this investigation were both exploratory and descriptive. These case-studies were considered unlikely to be explanatory due to the lack of knowledge surrounding the phenomena under investigation. Using the case-study taxonomy proposed by Light (1980) and applying it to this investigation, suggests that these case-studies were psychological and, thus, analytical. They were also therapeutic, in that the process and the relationship between myself and informants was considered to be of some importance. Finally, they were also concerned with some neurological factors, given the pathology of dementia.

Advantages in the Use of Case- Study Methods

The advantages of the use of the case-study method in this investigation were many. The use of open-ended, informal interviews permitted a descriptive and exploratory approach. These interviews allowed the informants time to use as they wished, and to choose any topic for discussion. There is some evidence provided by Mishler (1986) and Paget (1983) that client-led interviews, in which both the interviewer and interviewee work together in trying to understand important client life experiences, encourages searching, reflective, and extended responses. Further, the longitudinal nature of this investigation meant that informants experienced the forming of new and stable relationships with the researcher. Over time, this new relationship was held in informant's memories, and allowed the

researcher to be greeted with warmth during her visits to the setting. This led to an increase in informant's well-being and trust, and enabled the generation of rich data.

A final consideration in the use of this method is that the presentation of this data, in the form of a narrative, allowed the informants to speak to a wide audience. So much of the clinical research with demented elderly people tends to focus on the negative aspects of this illness. The findings of such research tends to be presented as numerical tabulations of endured loss. The use of the informants personal narrative in a single case-study, permits sufferers of this illness to share their thoughts and feelings with others. To allow their listeners to marvel and wonder at their recollections of the past, rather than stress the fading of their cognitive abilities.

It is this sharing of emotional experiences, suggests Denzin (1989a) that leads to a greater understanding. Understanding is an interactional experience which requires the interpreter to enter into the experience of another. Denzin (1989b) further suggests that the relating of an experience to another is a self story, which places the self centrally in the narrative. Self stories are, therefore, personal narratives, or the person's story of his or her life. It is this concept of a life history told in the form of a story or narrative, which is worthy of further discussion.

3.3 THE STUDY OF NARRATIVE

Telling stories about past events appears to be a universal human activity that begins early in life. White (1973) suggests that it is a

method of making sense of experience, whether it be satirical, tragic, humorous or romantic. Denzin (1989b) argues that personal narratives are similar to oral histories, personal histories, and case histories. They define one another only in terms of difference. The meanings of each spill over into the meanings of the other. Further, Denzin (1989b, p.28.) suggests that stories of a life consist of two phenomena: lived experiences, and a person who is both a self conscious being and a named cultural creation. Bruner (1986) argues that the representation of experiences which form the narrative, can be understood as a way in which realities of life present themselves to the consciousness of the human being .

Personal experiences form part of a person's life story, but no self story ever stands alone. Denzin (1989b) suggests that it is always embedded in a cultural, ideological, and historical context. It is necessary, therefore, to have some understanding of these contextual issues in order to have greater understanding of a life. A hermaneutical approach aids this understanding of a life through an interpretation of the text of the narrative. Thus, Widdershoven (1993) indicates that the relationship between life and story can be characterised as interpretative.

Riessman (1993, p.5.) argues that narratives are, therefore, essentially meaning making structures, which are constructed, creatively authored, rhetorical, replete with assumptions and interpretive. She suggests that interpretations are inevitable because narratives are representations. Further, Riessman (1993) points out that investigators, themselves, have only indirect access to informant's experiences through ambiguous representations of talk, text,

interaction and interpretation. The narrator tells his or her story through the filters of language, para-language and significance of meaning. It is, according to Merleau-Ponty (1964, p.119.) a representation of facts and the description of facticities, or how these facts were lived and experienced by interacting individuals.

Riessman (1993) suggests that the idea of representing experience in the research process may be perceived as a series of transformations which begins with the primary experience itself. During this investigation it is expected that an informant will narrate some past meaningful event. According to levels of cognitive impairment, the informant will then selectively recall the experience (attending). This is the first level of representation which is followed by the second level, that of narrating the story (telling). This, again, will depend on informant's levels of cognitive impairment and/or the levels of desired disclosure. The narrative is inevitably a self representation (Goffman, 1959). For all of us, there is an unavoidable gap between the lived experience and the telling of it. Mishler (1986) suggests that the researcher will often influence the form and content of the narrative, through the process of interaction. Further, Helling (1988, p.235.) points out that the interview text is, itself, an interactive product, even before it is read and analysed.

The next stage of the research process is the transcribing of the conversation from the taped interview (transcribing). Again this involves representation of the conversation into text, which is an interpretive process. There were times, in this investigation, when it was difficult to understand informant's words. It was often impossible to understand confabulated sentences. It was, therefore, necessary to

indicate in the text where I failed to understand what informants were saying.

The fourth level of representation is the evaluation of the transcribed text (analysing). It is at this stage that the researcher endeavours to impart a sense of coherence to the whole. Developing theory must support and be supported by the narratives of informants. As Denzin (1989b, p.81.) argues, our texts must always return to, and reflect the words persons speak, as they attempt to give meaning and shape to the lives they lead. The narrative must also fit the requirements of the written document. It is this sense of editing that creates a false document, as it is represented in a different format to the original (Behar, 1993).

The fifth and final level of representation occurs when the reader encounters the written report of the investigation (reading). Again, the reading of the text is, according to Riessman (1993, p.15.), open to varied interpretations. Meaning is ambiguous because it arises out of a process of interaction between people: self, teller, listener, analyst, and reader. Meaning is fluid and contextual, not fixed or universal. All we have suggests Riessman (1993) is talk and texts that represent reality, partially, selectively, and imperfectly. It is this discussion of representation that gives some understanding of the problematic nature of narrative truth. Narratives are interpretive and, in turn, require interpretation. Stivers (1993, p.424.) argues that analytic interpretations are partial, alternative truths that aim for believability, not certitude, for enlargement of understanding rather than control.

Denzin (1989b) describes a truthful narrative as one that is faithful to facticities and facts. Denzin (1989b) together with Freeman (1993) argue that a truthful narrative creates believable experiences for the reader, who reads the text through his or her own life. Schafer (1981) and Spence (1982) suggest that the interpretation of texts and single cases aim for narrative truth. Spence (1982) suggests that this is attained by interpretations which are internally coherent; have a continuous structure in which early events logically relate to later occurrences; embody closure or a sense of things fitting into a final form; and finally, are aesthetically pleasing.

Riessman (1993) suggests that validation of the narrative rests on the concept of trustworthiness. It is this concept that moves the process of validation into the social world. Riessman gives four criteria that can be used to validate a narrative analysis. The first criterion is that of persuasiveness which is related to plausibility. This enables the reader of the narrative to perceive it as reasonable and convincing, when theoretical claims are supported by evidence from informant's accounts of their lives. However the literary and interpretative skills of the researcher, as the author of the report may unduly influence the reader. Texts, suggests Riessman (1993, p.66.), have unstable meanings.

Riessman (1993) further suggests that the written report can be verified by those who have given an account of their lives. This would appear to be desirable where possible. However, in the case of this investigation it is not practical due to most informants poor short term memory. Indeed, Riessman maintains that human stories are not static, meanings change. In the final analysis, it is the researcher

who is responsible for the truths of the narrative.

A third criterion, that of coherence, assumes that the coherence can be considered to consist of three types: global; local; and themal. Global coherence refers to the overall goals of the narrator. Local coherence stresses the way in which the narrator links events within the narrative. Themal coherence is concerned with content, the themes of the narrative. Agar and Hobb (1982) suggest that if discourse can be shown to be understood in terms of the three kinds of coherence, then the interpretation is strengthened. However, Riessman (1993) argues that these concepts of coherence are difficult to apply to all investigations.

Finally, Riessman posits a future validation criterion, that of acceptance by the scientific community. This does not, however, aid the researchers argument for validation prior to this acceptance. The problem of validating the narrative cannot, therefore, include a set of formal rules or standardised technical procedures. There is, suggests Riessman (1993) no canonical approach in interpretive work.

This discussion of theoretical considerations for the validation of narrative analysis suggests, therefore, that an unambiguous adherence to the text should minimise false representation. The present investigation is a longitudinal story of individual experiences and the emotionally meaningful memories of informant's. Allowing informants to tell their own stories, to be the authors of the text, should permit a more authentic interpretation of their meanings. A repetition of these stories, over the life of the investigation, should strengthen verisimilitude or plausibility. In many ways, repetition of

these memories suggests that the authors of the text 'agree' that these accounts are meaningful and contain a global and thematic coherence. The criterion of local coherence, which permits the use of linguistic devices to relate events to one another, is not too easily met in this study. Some informants did not easily link events in order to give their stories a further and deeper meaning. According to Denzin (1989b), the primary obligation in the presentation of any narrative is always to the people whose stories we study, not to the project or larger discipline. The stories that are given to the investigator to share with others are testimonies to our human ability to endure, to prevail, and to survive. Denzin (1989a) argues that narratives should establish the significance of an experience. The voices, feelings, actions, and meanings of interacting individuals should be heard.

As with the pilot study, it was envisaged that these characteristics of interacting individuals would be more easily observed in an individual interview situation. These interviews, again, would be unstructured in an effort to allow informants to more freely recall their own personal narrative, with the assistance of interviewer counselling skills. The richness of data would depend on my own skills as an interviewer/investigator. The generation of data would again, heavily rest on the relationship between myself and informants. The investigator should perhaps at this point, shed the cloak of anonymity and step briefly into the spot light.

3.4 A PERSONAL STATEMENT

As has already been indicated in the introduction to this work, I have been involved in the residential care of older people for the past

seventeen years. The last eleven years have been spent as an owner/manager of a private residential home for twenty elderly people. Of these twenty older people, eleven have dementia in a moderate to severe form. I have long been interested in the endeavour to improve the quality of life for these people.

I am, therefore, an interested practitioner with a desire to 'know more' about my area of interest. This has been expressed through my participation in a number of courses. These have enabled me to become a 'professional practitioner' and I am qualified in residential social work, qualified to teach and to write training material. As the pilot study for this present investigation was part of a research program, I, therefore, came to this present work with some knowledge of the research process. I am also near the completion of a three year counselling course, which will allow me to become an accredited counsellor.

Counselling skills have always played a role in my own work. Some years ago I noticed that confused residents enjoyed a discussion of their past lives. It tended to reduce high anxiety levels, providing it was handled with empathy and skill. It was also more effective when undertaken on an individual basis. Residents looked as if they were happy when we discussed their past together. They smiled and laughed during this activity. Reminiscence therapy gradually became one of my interests. This generated and widened my interest in this process. I wondered if other older people with dementia would also enjoy this activity. Was it effective in my Home because I knew these people so well? Would it be as effective with strangers? This interest formed the basis for the pilot study which was described in chapter

one of this work. The pilot study proved to be very successful, and from the material generated, I have been able to write a number of papers which have been accepted for publication.

I remain, therefore, a practioner and a researcher, with a strong desire to improve the well-being of older people who have some kind of dementing illness. My personal religious faith supports my stance, and validates my efforts to return a wholeness of being to these people. Finally, it should perhaps be stressed that I actually like older people, with or without dementia, and take great pleasure in their company. It is this, that I feel allows me to form strong relationships with my own residents, and all informants in an interview situation. It was the characteristics of the informal interview, used in both the past and present investigation, which generated much rich data. The format of this structure is, therefore, of significance to this present work.

3.5 DESCRIPTION OF INFORMAL INTERVIEW FORMAT USED DURING THIS INVESTIGATION

Most interviews in this investigation were recorded on a small, powerful, battery controlled and unobtrusive audio-cassette recorder. This method of data collection is perceived by Hammersley and Atkinson (1983) as reducing reactivity. Further, the previous study had shown that some informants could not sit still for any length of time, and would wander through the setting. This method of recording allowed me to wander with them, and even use it as we walked in the grounds together. I frequently played back a portion of the tape at the closure of an interview, so that informants could hear themselves

speak. Without exception, it made them laugh. I had considered videoing interviews, but I decided that it was inappropriate because of the aforementioned reason. Ethically, it was also unappealing for me. I felt that many of the informants might, in earlier years, have found it objectionable. I also felt it was too obtrusive and the setting did not readily lend itself to this method of data collection. Clients who visited the setting would often wander into rooms when the interviews were taking place. It was always simple to switch off the audio-cassette recorder without too much disruption. It would have been far more difficult to do this with video equipment. It was also ethically important to remember that I had been given permission to interview selected informants, but not others.

Prior to the commencement of any interviews, informants were always asked if they would like to talk to me. After agreement had been reached, they were then asked if they would like to go somewhere quiet, or stay in the main day room with other clients. Most informants chose to go into the small quiet lounge, or the empty dining room. Sometimes, if other rooms were occupied, we used the staff room if it was free. Interviews that took place on a one to one basis, in quiet surroundings, always yielded more significant data. The interviews themselves began with a brief 'warming up' period and, similarly, a short closing session on completion of interview. All interviews were informal and open ended. There were no set questions.

As with the pilot study, some knowledge of informant's past life experiences was of significant importance during the interviews. This knowledge permitted me to locate past experiences in the 'here and now', especially during seemingly confabulated talk. Most relatives

and staff gave descriptions of informant's past life experiences, and provided cues and prompts in the form of photographs. One informant's wife actually provided a short account of their life together, complete with pictures of houses, family and friends. Interviewer knowledge of the informants past, was the primary resource used during this investigation. The opening remarks from an informant would often dictate the content and flow of the conversation. If informants did not provide cues, then I introduced a significant topic from their past. This was usually concerned with their childhood. This was often provided by the informants, themselves, during a previous interview, but was occasionally supplemented by interview with relatives and/or staff in the setting.

The main counselling techniques used were exploratory questions, with the use of attentive and active listening. The use of advanced accurate empathy, building on primary level empathy, also formed part of these techniques. Egan (1975) suggests that primary level empathy focusses on relevant surface feelings and meanings. Advanced accurate empathy is an interpretative response. It focusses on feelings and meanings that are somehow buried, hidden, or beyond the client's immediate reach. Other counselling techniques used, were respect and non judgmental probes and stance. I consciously used an appropriate tone, pitch and rate of speech for individual informants, and the topic under discussion. This appeared to aid informant response. Nelson-Jones (1993) argues that the voice message frames the verbal message. All research interviews are 'conversations with a purpose' (Berg, 1989; Bingham and Moore, 1959). The use of appropriate interviewer skills aids the 'purpose' or the collection of data.

Chernitz (1986) argues that qualitative informal interviews require the researcher to possess interpersonal skills that facilitate the easy flow of conversation. Lofland and Lofland (1984) further suggest that effective interviewing techniques contain such skills as careful listening, observing, ensuring absence of threat, and respect for the informant. I endeavoured to adhere to these precepts, and demonstrate these skills during all interviews with the informants, relatives, and staff in the setting.

The length of the interviews depended on informants. If they were tired or uninterested, interviews would be short and might only last for ten minutes. If informants were enjoying the process, then the interviews would be longer and might take up to an hour. There were a few informants who were reluctant to let me go.

3.6 ANALYSIS OF DATA

All recorded interviews were transcribed. This was an arduous task as there were one hundred and forty one interviews, plus a further three with one informant, who left the investigation in its early stages. These transcribed interviews produced nearly seven hundred and fifty pages of text. Another difficulty was that some informants had severe speech defects, combined with confabulated speech. It was occasionally impossible to understand their words. The meaning, however, was usually very clear.

In spite of the time consuming nature of the task, there were many benefits to this method. It was often easier to understand the complete 'message' as I transcribed data. It was also possible to

actually hear what they were saying. Some informants spoke very quietly, but I could adjust the volume as I listened to their recorded voices in the privacy of my home.

I frequently experienced feelings of amazement as I transcribed their words. Often I had seemingly 'intuitively' grasped the meaning of their message, even though I had misunderstood words and sentences. Equally, I felt quite de-skilled when I heard myself give inappropriate responses in some situations.

Berg (1989) however, would disagree with this concept of intuition. He argues that interviewer skills are not based on intuition or insight. They are based on the interviewer's ability to respond appropriately to cues and prompts in a 'drama'. In this drama the interviewer performs the roles of actor, choreographer, and director. He suggests that these skills are used in a self conscious social performance, that allows informants to feel comfortable in the interview situation. As an actor learns a role, so too will the interviewer learn these skills.

I did feel that the interviews with informants were 'conversations with a purpose', but I rarely felt 'in command' of the interview situation. I perceived my own role to be of lesser status than that of a director or choreographer. It was normally the informants who controlled events. I felt as if I had been given special permission to accompany someone on a journey. I was permitted to share the mundane and meaningful experiences of this journey. I was not permitted, however, to choose our destination.

This deductive stance, possibly enhanced the richness of data.

Analysis of this data generated by the interviews, allowed for a number of qualitative methods of analysis. One such approach was that of content analysis, which is a method of handling narrative, qualitative material. Content analysis, however, has some disadvantages. It is a very time consuming method, with some risk of subjectivity.

Another possible method was that of analytic induction. This method has several similarities to that of grounded theory. It has, however, some important differences. Analytic induction is concerned with the testing of inductively derived hypotheses. The grounded theory method is concerned with the generation of categories, properties ,and hypotheses, rather than testing them. On further reflection, it was decided to use the grounded theory method of data analysis. This was the main method of data analysis used for the pilot investigation.

Other researchers concerned with the analysis of transcribed interviews from single case-studies, have also used grounded theory methods for data analysis. One such researcher has written of the value of grounded theory to psychological research (Rennie and Brewer, 1987; Rennie et al, 1988). Rennie commented that it was the sheer amount of generated data that drew him and his colleagues towards qualitative methods. Further, his study, although larger than this present investigation, was concerned with client's representation of experience in a psychotherapeutic relationship (Rennie, 1992). There were several similarities between his reported account and this present inquiry. Both were client led, were concerned with the narrative, and with the use of psychotherapeutic interventions.

Rosenthal (1993) also used the basis of this method in her interpretation of the life of a former member of the Hitler Youth organisation. This particular study is interesting in that the recorded interviews were transcribed in their entirety, word for word with no respect for the rules of written language. Again, this was a procedure which was largely adopted during the transcribing of interviews for this investigation.

Rosenthal perceives the narrated life story as a sequence of mutually interrelated themes. These themes between them, form a dense network of interconnected cross references. A global analysis of all interviews was undertaken according to the model of theoretical sampling found in grounded theory methods. Her study focussed on the in-depth interpretation of one case-study. Rennie's (1992) inquiry is concerned with fourteen informants. This investigation has a sample of eight informants. Grounded theory, therefore, would appear to be an appropriate method for the analysis of data generated from transcribed interviews.

Grounded Theory

Grounded theory, as propounded by Glaser and Strauss (1967), is the discovery of theory from data. It is a systematic method of developing theory that is 'grounded' in the phenomenon under investigation. One of the fundamental features of this approach is that data collection and data analysis occur simultaneously. Hutchinson (1986) suggests that the method is circular, allowing the researcher to change focus and pursue leads revealed by the ongoing data analysis.

Noerager Stern (1980) argues that grounded theory can also be described as a form of field methodology, which aims to generate theoretical constructs, which explain the action in the social context under study. According to Tesch (1991), a single research project does not produce an entire social theory, but it can develop a set of theoretical propositions. Strauss (1987) argues that it is this construction of theory which produce concepts which seem to fit the data.

Noerager Stern (1980) further suggests that grounded theory is especially useful in areas which have been the subject of little research, as is this investigation. It is obvious that where no theory exists, then no theory can be tested. It is also argued that this particular methodology can give a fresh perspective in a familiar situation. Hawker (1982) argues that it would appear to be of particular use when applied to data obtained from semi-structured or unstructured interviews .

During this investigation, data from each set of informant's transcribed interviews were compared and conceptualised in terms of commonalities. Each piece of data was examined and coded. Coding took place in three stages. The first stage is that of open coding, or level one. Level one coding was concerned with the generation of as many codes as possible in order to insure full theoretical coverage.

Level one coding broke the data into small pieces, whereas levels two and three refined the data to more theoretical levels. In this investigation, the data from each interview was broken and coded into themes. Each theme then generated more codes. The constant

comparison of data allowed the grouping together of similar concepts. Level two coding or categorisation, saw some level one codes subsumed into a larger category.

Decisions about categories are reached by constant scrutiny of similarities between incidents. Finally, the emerging categories are compared to ensure mutual exclusiveness and cover the behavioural variations. Level three codes or theoretical constructs, are a combination of academic and clinical knowledge. Hutchinson (1986) suggests that these constructs create theoretical meaning and scope to the theory, by conceptualising the relationship between the three levels of codes. The conceptual tasks involved in the analytic component of this investigation, involved the reading and re-reading of all transcribed interviews.

Glaser and Strauss (1967) argue that it is these reflective periods which allow the researcher 'time out' from data collection and permit the uninterrupted consideration of the field experience. Further, it allows the researcher to reflect systematically about the data, in accordance with basic analytical categories and to consider the interplay between the two.

The properties from identified categories in this investigation were defined and individual categories were then written on small colour coded cards. The collected data was coded and categorised as coded data that seem to cluster together in recognisable concepts (Hawker, 1982; Noerager Stern, 1980). Data under analysis were constantly compared with each piece of data, in what is often called the constant comparison method (Glaser and Strauss, 1967).

The categories elicited from the data were constantly compared to data obtained earlier in the data collection, so that commonalities and variations were determined. Most individual interviews from this investigation were transcribed shortly after recording, and before I again entered the setting. I was, therefore, highly sensitised to the emotional responses surrounding informant's themes. This made it possible to reintroduce a meaningful theme with individual informants and, if appropriate, to cross check this with other informants.

As the data collection proceeded, the inquiry became increasingly focussed on theoretical concerns. Main categories or variables began to emerge to undergo constant comparison with all other data, and to see if they were central to the emerging theory. This process of theoretical or selective sampling is deductive, but also inductive. Noerager Stern (1980) suggests that it seeks not only to prove, or disprove, the importance of categories, but also to study in depth, the properties and dimensions of these categories. Lofland and Lofland (1984) and Tesch (1991) further suggest that these categories may be compared to the conceptual equivalent of file folders, for they serve to organise pieces of data.

Selective sampling led to the saturation of categories, which occurred when nothing new concerning identified categories was discovered. It is at this point that categories began to be collapsed. For instance, there were several categories relating to memory, but it became apparent that only two categories were significant. This was the categories of semantic and autobiographical memory. Finally, it was recognised that only the category of autobiographical memory was

significant, in terms of this investigation. This was confirmed by the literature (Conway, 1990). He suggests that the importance of semantic memory is less significant in autobiographical recall.

This process of reduction enabled the integration of the categories into possible core categories (Glaser and Strauss, 1967). The identification of a core category or categories imposed a responsibility on the part of the investigator to verify the significance of the core category, through the assistance of an authoritative figure in the field. Verification for this part of the investigation was sought and obtained from two psychologists, and from three accredited counsellors.

Ongoing with the discovery and identification of the core category was the memoing and theoretical coding (the thinking of descriptive coding in theoretical terms of data). Strauss and Corbin, 1990 suggest that memos are the written records of analysis related to the formulation of theory. They are kept separately from documentation concerned with categories. Thus, memoing is the writing down of any idea that seems connected with the data. Ideas were therefore, grounded in data. Memos themselves, argue Strauss and Corbin (1990) hold the key to order.

The sorting of memos is a vital part in the analytical process. The reading, rereading, and sorting of memos allowed a descriptive story to be written. This descriptive story was then translated into analytical concepts. According to Hutchinson (1986) it is the discovery of a core category or variable which is an essential requirement for a quality grounded theory. This requires continuous reference to the data,

combined with rigorous analytic thinking. The core category possesses three characteristics: it occurs frequently in the data, it links the various data together and it explains much of the variation in the data. It was this category that became the basis for the generation of theory during this investigation.

According to Strauss and Corbin (1990, p.121.), each study should possess only one core category in order to achieve the tight integration and the dense development of categories required of a grounded theory. Further, Glaser and Strauss (1967) suggest that the investigator should possess theoretical sensitivity, which will permit the conceptualisation, and formulation, of theory as it emerges from the data. Constant immersion in the data allowed me to have some theoretical insight into the particular area of research and to perceive links with existing theory. This also allowed me to have a combined ability to make something of these insights (Glaser and Strauss, 1967).

Hutchinson (1986, p.126.) indicates that the process of grounded theory is not easy for the investigator "who experiences alternating periods of confusion and enlightenment". It is not an orderly linear process. There is a possibility that small samples can become even smaller. This is especially true of research into people with incurable illness, as in this present investigation. No informant died during the main period of the investigation, but it was an ever present possibility that this would happen.

The investigator using this method, learns to live and work with uncertainty. The investigator can also feel in the midst of total chaos

as the investigation, memoing and categorising of data simultaneously proceed. The use of grounded theory produces a great mass of information which must be organised.

The advantages of the method for this investigation were many. The use of grounded theory was instrumental in the discovery that all of the elderly people with dementia, who took part in this investigation, possessed a significant number of 'very old' emotional memories. Thus this method enabled the investigation to focus on specific categories of dominance and to indicate new areas of potential research.

Further Considerations in the Transcribing and Analysis of Interviews During this Investigation.

After the sessions were completed, the tape was dated and indexed to show the names of all recorded informants. All interviews were transcribed onto cards that were part of a card index file. Each informant had a card containing personal information such as name, date of birth, date of admittance to setting, next of kin and primary nurse. All recorded interviews were transcribed as discussed previously. All significant data found in the text of transcribed interviews were transcribed onto cards under appropriate headings. The text, or transcribed discussions between myself and the informants, was the sole source of data used for analysis.

Memo cards for each interview were also developed as each interview was analysed. Each interview memo card was numbered with the initials of informant, number and date of the interview. They contained an overview of the interview, and the ideas that seemed to

be connected with the data. Appropriate headings, or categories, also developed as the interviews progressed. Analysis and constant comparison of interview content allowed the development of these headings or categories,which were then transcribed on colour coded cards. Each card, as for the memo cards, was numbered and included the informant's initials, number and date of the interview.

The final categories were themes, significant others, significant events, emotions and feelings, general memory, autobiographical memory, and semantic memory. These categories may appear to be rather limited, but it must be remembered that the area under study was that of informant's emotional memories. It was necessary, therefore, to have broad sweeping categories that would include any type of emotional memory. Perhaps the most broad sweeping category of all, was that of 'themes'. This category acted as a base or lower order category (Rennie, 1992) whose properties formed part of all other categories.

The concept of 'a significant other' comes from the work of Mead (1934) whose contribution to the theory of Symbolic Interactionism led him to see the growth of personality as directly attributable to the responses of significant/generalised others. Symbolic Interactionists argue that we can only know our own self, our social identity, through the responses of others. Significant others, therefore, appeared to be a highly meaningful category for this investigation.

It was not until the process of data analysis was quite advanced that I had some theoretical understanding of this category. Although each informant had a varying number of 'significant others' in memory, the

most significant person mentioned was that of the self. All autobiographical memories, as indicated by the literature, were highly self referent. Again, this category became a base category which generated a more significant category, that of self.

The nature of this investigation gave importance to the category of emotion and feeling, and to the categories concerned with memory. As the analysis of data progressed, categories were reduced and others expanded. The category of general memory was abandoned as it became obvious that this was repeated in the category of autobiographical memory. It was also repeated in varying degrees within the category of semantic memory. This was also true of the category of significant events.

As the investigation advanced, the category of semantic memory and significant events shrank, but the category of autobiographical memory grew in importance. A further category emerged from the reduction and expansion of these categories. This was the category of self stories or personal narratives of informant's, related to meaningful and emotional life events. It was this category that possessed the three characteristics of a core category. It occurred frequently in the data, it linked the various data together and it explained much of the variation in the data. It was this core category that was felt to hold significance for the questions posed by this investigation. The analysis of data from this investigation commenced from the beginning of this work in April 1992, with the recording and transcribing of interviews. It continued until the end of the investigation in January 1994, and included further interviews with informants to test generated theory.

Presentation of Data Analysis

The question of how to present the findings of any investigation requires considerable thought. This investigation was no exception. The decision to use single case-study methods was made in order to allow each informant to tell their story, or personal narrative, to others. This sharing of meaningful past memories encourages understanding. Further, the following of specific rules enables the reader of the case-study to be able to enter the 'world of the other'. However, there was some danger that the voices of informant's could be muffled by the amount of background information needed to meet the demands of these precepts. In addition, analysis of the data had indicated a number of significant categories. From these categories emerged the core category which was grounded in the generated data. Again, it was necessary to clearly indicate the contextual emergence of these concepts.

Consideration of these points suggested that each case-study should form a single chapter of this work. However, the criteria for the presentation of a thesis of this nature indicated that the case-studies would be more suitably placed in the appendix to this work. The findings are, therefore, presented as a critical comparison of all case-studies, using second order analysis. Chapter four, the preceding chapter to the findings, contains background information on each informant. The single case-studies are arranged in the appendix as a series of interconnected narratives, through the words of the informants. This, as has been previously discussed, strengthens interpretation and the criteria for validation of the narrative.

The focus of the main narrative was that of the significant emotional memories of the informant's, told over the period of the investigation. Within this biography was the story of the developing relationship with the interviewer. As these stories unfold, it is possible to see the emergence of theoretical concepts, which have their basis in informant's dialogue. The conclusion to the findings will discuss the comparison of these concepts and an exploration of the commonalities between them.

3.7 ETHICAL CONSIDERATIONS IN THE USE OF QUALITATIVE METHODS

Berg (1989) argues that the use of qualitative methods imposes a duty on the investigator to consider ethical issues and concerns, such as informed consent and confidentiality. The issue of informed consent may be difficult as in the case of this investigation. Informed consent was obtained from the professional and relatives of the informants, and implied consent by the informants themselves. The investigator must also protect the privacy of the setting and informants by the use of pseudonyms, as was the case in this investigation. In all qualitative research it is the expected duty of the investigator to ensure a high degree of confidentiality.

Another possible source of difficulty may be that the nature of the investigation could lead to overdisclosure by the participants. The investigator must then decide if it is ethical to include these views in the written work. If it is not, then they must be excluded. This was the policy adopted during this investigation.

The ethical considerations for each piece of qualitative research must be considered in great depth. Ethically, each situation is different and must be viewed as a separate issue. The question of ethical considerations in the use of qualitative research, places an individual burden of responsibility on all researchers. In many instances, it is often the researcher who alone must define what is ethical in research (Berg, 1989).

Ethical Considerations for this Investigation.

Permission for this investigation to take place was sought from a variety of sources. Permission was sought from the local Ethical Committee for Research. Permission was granted for the investigation to take place. Permission was also sought from the Clinical Services Manager (Elderly) for the investigation to take place in the hospital. Again, permission was granted for the investigation to take place. An interview took place with the hospital Consultant Psychogeriatrician in which details of the investigation, including the methodology, were discussed. The Consultant Psychogeriatrician gave permission for his patients to be used in the investigation. There was a further meeting in March 1992 with the senior charge nurse of the setting. During this meeting the investigation was again discussed in some depth. Proposed informants suitable for the study were discussed at length, including the most appropriate days and times for the research to take place.

Permission was also sought from the proposed eight informants. I was introduced to three of them informally, during this first visit to the setting. During this meeting, they were asked if they would like

someone to talk to them about their past lives on a regular basis. All agreed. It was felt that if they did not wish to take part, then this would become quickly apparent during the course of the interviews.

Following the initial meeting with the senior charge nurse in the setting, it was agreed that I should write a general letter explaining the purposes of the investigation. This was pinned on the notice board in the setting for all to see. It was further agreed that I would write to each of the informant's relatives explaining the purpose of the investigation and asking permission for their relatives to take part. All gave their permission and expressed interest in the project. As with the pilot investigation, they indicated that they felt it would be beneficial for informants to take part. Relative co-operation was very high, a fact that has been discovered in other health care settings (Hawker 1982). As these permissions were given, I returned to the setting at various times throughout March/April 1992, to meet the remaining informants who agreed to take part in the study. Interviews began in April 1992.

After some months into the investigation, another man began to attend the setting. He was frequently in tears and seemed to be very unhappy. He often wanted to talk to me. I approached the senior charge nurse to discuss the advisability of including this man in the study. He felt that it would be appropriate. I wrote to the elderly man's wife for the necessary permission. After discussion with the charge nurse and myself, she gave her permission for her husband to take part. By this time, one of the informants had left the investigation, as it was felt to be too much for her. She was aged ninety five years and became quickly tired during the interview

process. Finally, it must be noted that all members of the Health Service, and informant's relatives were extremely friendly, helpful, and cooperative throughout this investigation.

3.8 THE SAMPLE

The investigation used a small group of eight elderly people, with moderate to severe medically diagnosed dementia. The decision to use eight informants was not fixed at the commencement of the investigation. The researcher was not sure how many informants she could manage at any one time. As the number of informants grew to eight, it was felt that this was a manageable number both for the researcher and for the investigation.

All informants, bar one, were living in the community with their relatives. Interestingly, the only informant who was living in a local authority home for the elderly, was unmarried. The group comprised of two females and six males. They were selected from the forty clients who attended the setting from between one and five days per week. Of these forty clients, twenty one were men and nineteen were women. This ratio constantly changed throughout the investigation, as clients left the setting to move into long term care, or died, and new clients took their place.

Although the total group consisted of slightly more males than females, the uneven balance between male and female informants was co-incidental. The initial selection of informants was made by the senior charge nurse of the setting. This also reduced the possibility of bias on behalf of the researcher. The basis of selection was that they

could respond verbally to questioning, could speak about their past life, and that they would enjoy one to one interaction with the investigator. The senior charge nurse said that there were other participants for the investigation, if there proved to be any difficulties with those he had selected. He was concerned that two informants who had quite severe speech impediments might not be suitable. After some discussion, we decided to include these two informants as it was felt that they would benefit from the experience. Further, all informants presented very differently. They had different personalities, interests and varying symptoms of dementia. They appeared to be an interesting group of people. As is indicated in the previous discussion of this section, pseudonyms are used throughout this report.

These people were: Mrs. Abigail Woodley; Mr. Ronnie Silverthorne; Mr. Charles Clerkenwell; Mrs. Bessie Pinks; Mr. Robert Biddley; Mr. Andrew Coxley; Mr. Melvin Rider and Mrs. Agnes Charlton. These people attended The Mary Walker Day Hospital, a psychogeriatric day care hospital situated in the grounds of a local psychiatric hospital. All informants attended the setting at least two days per week. After some weeks and three interviews, Mrs. Agnes Charlton retired from the investigation. Her place was taken by Mr. Hugh Raft. Of these nine informants, eight were selected by the senior charge nurse and one, Mr. Hugh Raft, by myself.

3.9 PROCEDURES.

The nursing staff were asked to provide description of procedures used in the setting. I was particularly asked to avoid disrupting organised group activities. The interviews, therefore, took place prior to, or after,

these events. Staff were also asked to describe individual informants personality, mood, and behaviour prior to the investigation. Nursing staff were also interviewed regularly to comment on any change in mood and behaviour during the process of the investigation.

All relatives, or key people such as social workers with an in-depth knowledge of informants, were interviewed. This allowed me to explain the purpose verbally, of the investigation and to define my role as a researcher. Some relatives felt I was, in some undefined way, part of the Health Service, and as such had access to resources. The main purpose of these interviews however, was to gather biographical knowledge of informants, and to seek for possibly meaningful events in their lives which could be used for prompts and cues during the interview process. Interviews with informant's relatives tended to last for about two hours, although some were longer. Relatives were also contacted at regular intervals throughout the investigation, to discuss any observed changes in behaviour of informants and for general comments on the investigative process.

The collection of data from informants took place through a series of regular interviews. These usually occurred on a weekly basis although they occasionally occurred more often than this. Sometimes the timespan was longer. due to illness or absence of informants from the setting. On some occasions, informants did not want to talk to me. The interviews initially took place in the afternoon, as I was then less likely to upset the routines of the setting. This, however, proved difficult as informants were very tired by this time. They were often too highly anxious and distressed to enjoy the interview process. I discussed this with the senior charge nurse who agreed that the

interviews could take place in the morning, prior to most group activities. The interviews then took place between 9 am and 10.30 am. This meant that my visits to the setting were frequent. I tended to be there approximately three times a week. Although this was time consuming, it did mean that informants began to remember me, and to greet me with pleasure.

I had learnt during the pilot investigation, that the length of the interviews would depend on how the informant was feeling on that day. Consequently no set time was given to individual interviews. My first visit to the setting was for an informal meeting with the informants and ward staff. These conversations were not recorded or transcribed although I took notes of the setting and informants for general use. There was eventually a total of one hundred and forty one recorded and transcribed interviews. These varied in length from approximately ten minutes to one hour. There were twenty five recorded and transcribed interviews with Mrs. Abigail Woodley, nineteen with Mrs. Bessie Pinks, seventeen with Mr. Charles Clerkenwell, fourteen with Mr. Bob Biddley, fifteen with Mr. Andrew Coxley, sixteen with Mr. Melvin Rider, thirteen with Mr. Hugh Raft and twenty two with Mr. Ronnie Silverthorne. These informants, however, were seen more regularly than the number of interviews would suggest (see appendix two, schedule of interviews).

Interviews with informants commenced in April 1992 and continued until December 1993. Three informants, however, were seen for a final interview in January 1994. During this period, two residents died, two were moved into a private sector psychogeriatric nursing home, one was in the assessment ward of the setting, waiting for a vacancy in a

suitable residential home and one became an in-patient of a long term psychogeriatric hospital. At the time of writing, two remain living with their spouses in the community.

3.10 CONCLUSION

It is evident that the description of the methodologies used during this investigation is based on relationships. This is, of course, true of all research methods, but has a deeper significance when focussed on the relational aspects of naturalistic investigations. The instigator and 'holder' of these many relationships is the researcher alone. This is possibly one of the many reasons for the scarcity of research in the field of emotions, memory and dementia. As I write these words, I become aware of the tremendous emotional burden placed on the researcher by this type of research, and use of these particular methods of data collection. Bromley (1986) argues that case-studies in general, should not be undertaken by unqualified investigators. Yin (1989) also maintains that case-study methods are extremely difficult to do well, due to the levels of skills needed by the researcher.

These relationships are concerned with instigation (getting in) maintenance (staying in) and endings (getting out). But it is more than this, because the researcher not only has a duty to maximise his or her data collection, but should minimise any possibility of negative impact in the field situation. This was not accomplished without some difficulties, because the relationships that I formed in the field were many and varied. The prime relationships were, of course, those with the informants, but other relationships were important. These included the hospital administrators, both individually and in groups.

They also incorporated the nursing staff, again, both individually and as a team. Other professionals such as unit managers, social workers and care staff were also involved.

I was also concerned with relatives as individuals and their own relationships with informants. Relationships were also implicit in my dealings with other clients in the settings for wherever I went, I spent time with other 'non informants' who wanted to talk to me. For the length of this investigation it was found to be necessary to keep a great many people happy, without compromising data collection.

This relational aspect is also reflected in the method of data presentation and analysis, for what is the single case-study method if not a story of a relationship? What is grounded theory if not an analytic method concerned with clusters of relational data? It is however, the personal aspect of 'relational methodology' that is perhaps underdefined and undervalued in descriptive studies. It is important to state that the quality of relationships enjoyed by the researcher and others, had some bearing on the quality of data generated by this investigation. The degree of 'researcher personal skills' therefore, has great bearing on qualitative studies that involve relational research.

Chernitz (1986), Hawker (1982), and Lofland and Lofland (1984) indicate that these skills are notoriously difficult to describe. Nelson-Jones (1993), however, suggests a number of helper attributes, applicable to the counselling relationship, that might be perceived as being a valued part of the researchers' skills. These are altruism; humanism; intellectual curiosity; worked-through emotional pain;

commitment to competence and people orientation. This latter attribute is concerned with Holland's (1973) taxonomy of personality or profiles of personality types. It is this social personality type which predominates in the profiles of counsellors. The characteristics of this profile suggest that they might well predominate in the personality profiles of researchers engaged in naturalistic inquiries.

This is not to suggest that the researcher of this investigation is the holder of this immense repertoire of skills, but has some knowledge of their existence. These skills, partially or in their entirety, appear to have great bearing on the outcomes of any naturalistic studies. The description of these and other skills form part of the methods used for this particular investigation and discussed throughout this chapter. These methodologies have been scrutinised in some depth in order to establish their suitability for the task.

The methodologies employed, allowed the researcher to gather, present and to collect data, which were used to test theoretical propositions which had arisen from this collected data. There will be further opportunities to study the contextual and relational aspects of this work during the next chapter, which is concerned with the informants and the various settings visited during the period of research, Ensuing chapters concerned with the findings from this investigation will indicate the relationship or 'fit' between proposed theoretical considerations and the generated data from this inquiry. The interpretation of these findings, though the combined use of case-study methods and that of grounded theory methodology, will permit critical considerations of their validity.

CHAPTER FOUR

BACKGROUND TO THE CASE-STUDIES: THE SETTINGS AND THE INFORMANTS

4.1 INTRODUCTION

The main setting used in the investigation was a psychiatric hospital situated near the centre of a small town, and which is very much part of the local community. It is a psychiatric hospital that cares for people of all ages, with some form of mental illness. The hospital has, at present, three wards that specifically care for older people. One ward, the Roycroft Assessment Unit, is a modern assessment centre. Another ward, Willow ward, is devoted to respite care, although there are some long stay beds. The final ward, Rosewood Annex, is concerned with patients who have medium dependencies. There is also a psychogeriatric day hospital, The Mary Walker day hospital, situated in the hospital grounds. Although informants were seen at various times in all of these settings, it was the Mary Walker day hospital which acted as the main setting for this investigation. As the investigation progressed, however, five informants moved on. Two became in-patients in Willow ward, two went into a large long stay psychogeriatric nursing home, and one into a local authority day care setting.

4.2 THE SETTINGS

The main description of the settings, therefore, will focus on the Mary Walker day hospital, although these other settings will be

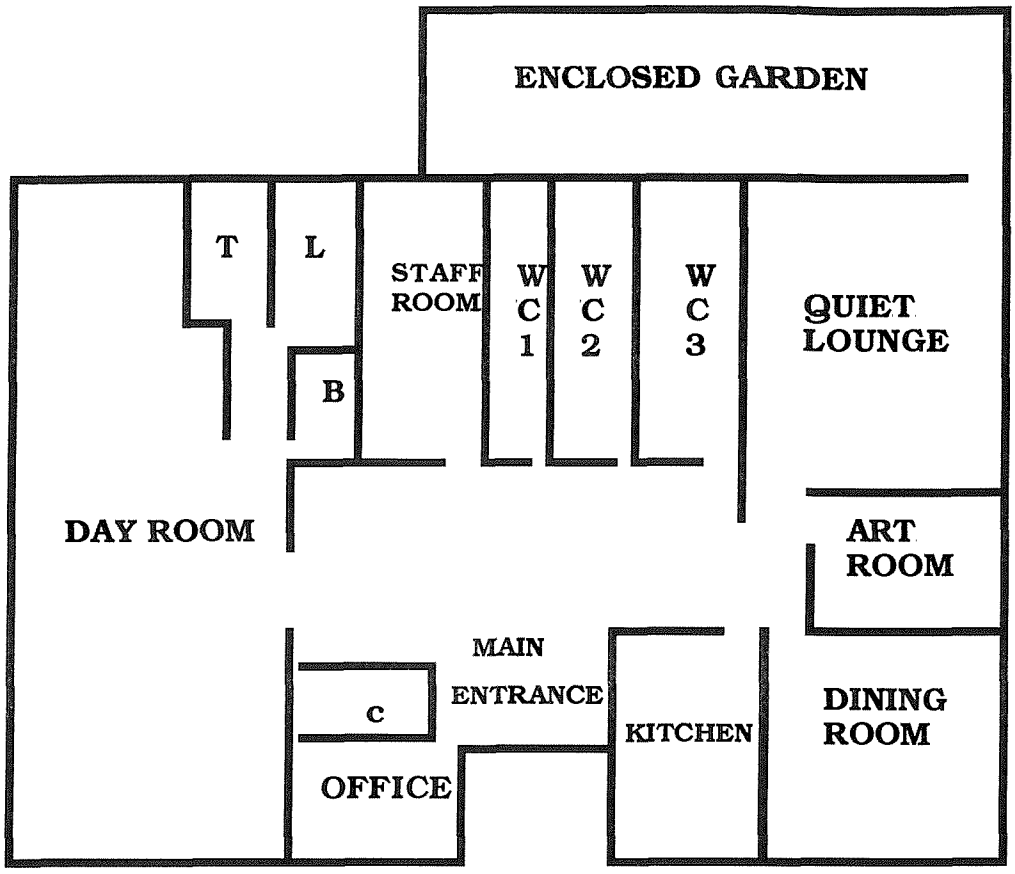
described briefly. As with all wards within the hospital, the Mary Walker Day Hospital is a simply designed, single storey detached building. The large windows allowed views of the grounds, and most of the other hospital buildings. The day hospital itself was built in the shape of a double 'L' with the main rooms sited at each end of the structure (see figure one, The Mary Walker Day Hospital).

The building was completed some ten years previously, and client needs have changed during this time. Staff in the setting, however, felt that the building on the whole, met these diverse needs in most cases. They saw the importance of the friendly 'homely' atmosphere provided by the staff team, as overcoming any inadequacies in the environment.

During my visits to the setting I was able to use the quiet lounge, the dining room, or even the staff room if it was unoccupied. Occasionally the venue was dictated by client's physical needs. The quiet lounge or the dining room were some distance from the day room, and sometimes clients were unable to walk this distance. Equally, if they were unable to settle, we would pace the main corridor together.

The day hospital can accept a maximum of twenty five clients per day, although this number can vary according to demand. It has a total client population of forty, with clients attending the setting between one and five days per week. Referrals to the setting are usually made by the consultant, social workers and community psychiatric nurses.

4.2 THE SETTINGS



T = TREATMENT ROOM

L = LAUNDRY ROOM

B = BATHROOM

C = COAT CUPBOARD

WC.1 = STAFF WC

WC. 2 = WOMEN'S WC

WC. 3 = MEN'S WC

FIG. 1 THE MARY WALKER DAY HOSPITAL

The setting is open Monday to Fridays, from 8.30am to 4.30pm. At present it is closed at weekends, although it is open during some public holidays. There is a future possibility that the setting will be opened at weekends, as this forms part of the strategic planning by the Health Authority to meet the demands of Community Care.

During the investigation, there was a team of five staff and one part time occupational therapist. The five members of staff included the senior charge nurse, two qualified nurses and two nursing auxiliaries. The minimum staffing levels insist on the presence of at least four nursing staff including one qualified staff member. Each day began with one member of staff reading the newspaper to the client group. Items from the news were discussed according to the interest displayed by the clients. There was a large board on the main wall of the day room which gave the day, date and season, together with a description of the weather. The menu for that day was also displayed clearly on this board. There was still plenty of board space available for various activities that took place throughout the day.

Each day, two to three more structured group activities took place. These activities consisted of art work, such as painting, pottery, posters, cooking, and various discussion groups which focussed on a specific theme such as gardening. Every effort was made to ensure clients were matched appropriately to these activities, and that they gained the maximum enjoyment from them.

The setting presented as a warm lively and very friendly place. All visitors were made welcome by all staff, who displayed attitudes of great kindness and humour, no matter how busy they appeared. It was not uncommon, at various times, to see relatives, hospital drivers, students or staff from other wards, chatting to the staff and clients. Often when I entered the setting, I would see clients sitting with the staff as they had their coffee break, or sitting in the office with the nurse in charge.

It is said that any institution lies in the shadow of its manager, and the caring approach used in the setting was reflected in the attitude of the senior charge nurse. The senior charge nurse was a friendly outgoing person, with great respect and concern for those in his care. Much of the success of this investigation rested on the support given to me by the staff in the setting. The management team themselves, were especially helpful during the long months we spent together, and I felt fortunate in having this network of support during stressful periods of this research.

Description of other settings

Two clients entered into long term nursing home care during the course of this investigation. They both entered the same establishment. This was a large psychogeriatric nursing home with a purpose built wing for those who were severely demented. It was situated in large grounds, some miles from the nearest town. One client who was very confused, went into this wing and the other client, who was less confused, was cared for in the main building. I visited this setting on a number of occasions, and,

again, I was made most welcome.

Another client who was felt to be inappropriately placed in the day hospital was moved on at his own request. He was offered day care at a local authority home for the elderly, in their separate wing for demented residents and day care visitors. I visited this setting for some months at weekly intervals. The staff there, too, were friendly and informative, and expressed great interest in the project. It must be said that at no time during this investigation was I ever made to feel unwelcome in any setting.

4.3 THE INFORMANTS

All informants, bar one, lived with their spouses in the community. The male informant who was the solitary exception to this rule, and who was a resident in a local authority home for the elderly, was unmarried. Some information concerning the informants came from social workers, friends or colleagues but, as would be expected, the main source of information came from close kin. The results of the various cognitive and behavioural tests came from the informant's hospital notes.

Although many of the informants were taking some form of psychotropic medication, it was decided not to include this information as their drugs regime underwent a number of changes throughout the series of interviews. It must be acknowledged, however, that psychotropic drugs will have an effect on mood and recall. The following descriptions of each of the informants was gathered mainly from husbands and wives, during single in-depth

individual interviews. All interviews lasted at least two hours.

Mrs. Abigail Florence Woodley

Mrs. Woodley was a quiet, pleasant lady, who was aged seventy six years at the beginning of the investigation. She lived with her husband, who acted as her main carer, in an immaculate semi-detached house, approximately one mile from the day hospital. Mr. and Mrs. Woodley had been married for nearly fifty years and had two daughters, now aged forty six and thirty nine years old. Both daughters had married, although one was now a widow. One daughter lived in the vicinity and saw her parents at least three times a week. The other daughter, who lived some distance away, still maintained close contact with them. The impression was of a close caring family who pulled together in times of crisis.

Mrs. Woodley herself, was one of seven girls. She had always lived in the locality apart from a relatively short time away during the war. Her father was part of a prosperous family bakery and her upbringing appeared to be untainted by poverty, although her childhood was marred by her poor relationship with her mother. Her family were also staunch supporters of the Salvation Army Church, and regularly attended their services in the small building which was close to their home.

Mrs. Woodley suffered from severe arthritis which affected both knees. Although this caused her pain, it did not affect her mobility. She was described by her husband as a worrier with a tendency to depression which appeared following the tragic death

of her son-in-law some seventeen years ago. Her depression seemed to deepen some five or six years prior to the diagnosis of Alzheimer's Disease at the end of 1990.

Mrs Woodley's hospital notes indicate that she was an in-patient at the general hospital in 1987. The reason for admittance was not given. Her clinician administered a cognition test during this time giving a score of 6/10. However, she refused to be referred to the psychiatric hospital for further assessment. In April 1990, her GP referred her to the hospital psychogeriatrician. Mrs Woodley was seen as an outpatient, in May 1990, at the memory clinic where her test scores for the Cambridge Examination for Mental Disorders of the Elderly (Camdex), were 55/107, having a cut off point of 80. Her Mini-Mental State Examination (MMSE) test score was 15/30, having a cut off point of 23. The clinician stated that there was a significant amount of cognitive and mental impairment and gave a diagnosis of SDAT with possible vascular component. Her husband who accompanied her found this to be a particularly distressing experience. He said of it:

It's like being told you've got cancer. They take you to a hospital, a place you've never been before and you think, what's it all about? You're just left to get on with it.

Following this, the community psychiatric nurse was assigned to the case. Mrs. Woodley continued to remain at home with no other input from the setting until April 1991 when she was admitted to the Assessment Unit as an in-patient for assessment procedures. A mental status questionnaire (MSQ) was

administered, giving a score of 4/10 and confirming the original diagnosis. As Mr. Woodley gradually became more familiar with hospital processes and became more involved with hospital staff, he adjusted to the many changes brought about by his wife's illness. Mrs. Woodley began to attend the day hospital two days a week, although this increased during the course of the investigation. Mr. Woodley also made use of the respite bed service every couple of months, in order to allow himself a one week break from the strain of caring for Mrs. Woodley.

During a period of respite care in August 1993, Mrs Woodley's notes indicate that there were attempts made to test her present mental status. She was asked four questions and gave one correct answer. She became distressed and irritable and no further questions could be asked. Mr. Woodley continued to surround her with calm and constancy throughout the progress of her illness by keeping to a stable routine, and by never "reprimanding her". He appeared to be a dedicated carer whose personal strengths permitted Mrs. Woodley to remain in the community.

Mr. Ronnie Silverthorne

Mr. Silverthorne was a tall quietly spoken man aged eighty years at the beginning of the investigation. He lived with his wife in a pleasant and well maintained bungalow situated in a small town some three miles from the setting. Mr. Silverthorne and his wife had been married for forty four years. They had no children. Mr. Silverthorne was born in London. He was one of five children. He had three older sisters and a brother who had died before Mr.

Silverthorne was born. Although Mr. and Mrs. Silverthorne had no children themselves, they maintained close contact with their nephews and nieces who appeared to visit them on a regular basis.

Mr. Silverthorne had spent most of his working life in the retail trade, commencing with an apprenticeship at Harrods. He left this trade to join the army during the war, but returned to it as soon as he was demobbed. He met his wife when working as a buyer at a large London department store. Mrs. Silverthorne was the managing director's secretary. Mr. Silverthorne held many positions as the general manager of large departmental stores, until his retirement in 1978, at the age of sixty five. His last job was that of general manager of a very popular department store in the locality.

A colleague of Mr. Silverthorne described him as being the best manager she had ever known. He was very good at getting results and handling staff. He was a very fair man, and was well respected by those seventy to eighty people who worked under him. She further described him as a man who was very set in his ways, one who "you could set your watch by". She felt his work and his wife were the two most important things in his life. These two areas however, were strictly compartmentalised. No member of staff had ever visited him at home.

The impression given of Mr. Silverthorne by his wife and colleague was of a very honourable man, who had firm principles which guided his actions, both at work and at home. He made all the

financial decisions for himself and his wife, and this proved to be an added problem for her as he began to falter mentally.
Mr. Silverthorne was diagnosed as having dementia in 1991, although there were signs of confusion as long ago as 1986. Mr.Silverthorne had been diagnosed as having diabetes in 1961 and having cataracts in the early 1980's. He had his first cataract operation, by laser, in 1986. It was during a routine visit to the diabetic clinic in January 1991 that the doctor casually told Mrs. Silverthorne that he felt her husband had AD and referred her to the psychogeriatrician.

This was a great shock to Mrs. Silverthorne, but worse was to follow. Mr. Silverthorne was due to have a necessary second cataract operation, but owing to his inability to remain still, this would have had to be performed under a general anaesthetic, with all the attendant risks that this involved. Mrs. Silverthorne was told that there were possibilities that this would increase his confusion, and that she alone would have to decide whether the risk was worth taking. She felt under great strain and was unable to decide what to do. Finally, she reasoned that his eyesight was very precious to him and at least he would still be able to see. The operation took place in March 1991. Mr. Silverthorne did not come through this procedure unscathed. Mrs. Silverthorne said of his confusion:

It blew the lid off it. I felt I had been kept in the dark.

His GP. referred him to the psychogeriatrician who saw him in June 1991. During the interview an MSQ was applied giving a

score of 2/10. He was diagnosed as having MID enhanced by diabetes. After diagnosis, Mr. Silverthorne began to attend the day hospital twice a week. This steadily increased during the course of the investigation, until he was attending five days a week.

Mrs. Silverthorne initially made very little use of the services on offer bar the visits to the day hospital, and the services of a sitter one afternoon a week from the Alzheimer Society sitting service. She was reluctant to make a fuss or draw attention to herself. She felt she ought to cope. During our meeting, she expressed feelings of hopelessness and despair:

I could cope if I knew when it would end. I'm in a sort of limbo.

In October 1992, some seven months after the commencement of the investigation, Mrs. Silverthorne agreed to her husband beginning planned respite care. Life for her however, remained very difficult. Mr. Silverthorne continued to live in the community until December 1992 when he was unable to leave the hospital, following a period of respite care in Willow ward, due to his frail physical condition. He died in the ward in March 1993. Mrs. Silverthorne had managed to care for him for some six years in their own home.

Mr. Charles Clerkenwell

Mr. Charles Clerkenwell was a charming elderly gentleman, who was aged eighty one years at the beginning of the investigation.

He was a very tall man, who needed some assistance when walking. His eyesight was very poor and he also suffered from arthritis. He lived with his second wife, who was nearly twenty three years younger than himself, in a small pretty town house, about a mile from the setting. He had been widowed in 1965, and his present wife had been divorced. They married in 1975. There were no children from either of his marriages, although his present wife had four children from her first marriage. All the children were now grown up and had left home.

Mr. Clerkenwell had been born in a large city built around a natural harbour, with important dockyard facilities. His father worked for a shipping company and was often away on long voyages. Mr. Clerkenwell appeared to have had a devoted mother, whom he dearly loved. She was a seamstress who worked at home and brought up her two children, Mr. Clerkenwell and his older sister. Mr. Clerkenwell passed a scholarship to go to the local grammar school, which he attended. On leaving school, he did various jobs until he was old enough to join the Army. He joined the Army when he was twenty one, and left when he was forty five years of age.

During his period of service, he fought in the second world war until he was captured by the Japanese. He was interred in the infamous Changi prison camp, where he was a prisoner of war for three years. His war experiences haunted him for many years. His wife said that he still suffered recurrent nightmares concerning his time in the camp.

After he left the Army, he joined a large international tyre company as a clerk. Although he hated it. he remained there for approximately twenty years, until his retirement in 1975. His wife described him as a very cautious and nervous person who was loathe to take risks. However, he was, she said:

A lovely fellow when we first married. He treated me like a lady. He has been a wonderful husband.

They had been married seventeen years at the beginning of the investigation, but the last couple of years had been miserable. Mr. Clerkenwell's behaviour had begun to deteriorate some two and a half years ago, when his eyesight began to fail. He became "awkward and nasty". He began to show signs of increasing jealousy of her children, and to complain when they visited. Mrs. Clerkenwell felt very torn during this time.

In 1991 his GP referred him to the psychogeriatrician who visited him in his own home in October 1991. During the interview the MMSE was applied giving a score of 11/27. He was diagnosed as having SDAT and began to attend the setting two days a week. This steadily increased during the course of the investigation until he was attending the day hospital five days a week. Mr. Clerkenwell also had regular respite care. In February 1993 his mental abilities were tested. The MTS was 4/10.

Again as with other carers, life for Mrs. Clerkenwell was difficult:

I feel as if I am fighting for my own identity. It feels as if you

are in a strait jacket, and you can't think of anything else.

Another problem for Mrs. Clerkenwell was her own ill-health. She had severe osteo-arthritis in her hip and was in some considerable pain. She was due to have a hip replacement at sometime in the future. This took place in the summer of 1993, and during this time Mr. Clerkenwell was cared for in Willow ward. Her long convalescence necessitated him spending some months in the setting, and his physical and mental condition slowly worsened. It became apparent that she could no longer care for him at home. Mr. Clerkenwell died in Willow ward in October 1993. His wife was a very regular and devoted visitor until the end.

Mrs. Bessie Pinks.

Mrs. Pinks was a small round elderly lady who was aged eighty five years at the beginning of the investigation. She lived with her husband in a small village, approximately two miles from the setting. She had been born in the locality, the child of a farm worker who had died at a young age from tuberculosis. She had two older brothers. Her mother found life hard as a widow, and it was a great struggle to make ends meet. Mr. Pinks said she had five shillings a week to bring up her family:

She was one of the best. It was a horrible bloody life.

When Mrs. Pinks was thirteen she began to help out at the local vicarage "doing odd jobs". She was then still at school. She eventually moved into the vicarage, before leaving school, as a

maid of all work. When she left school at fourteen, she continued to live in at the vicarage and became a full time worker. She married when in her twenties, from the vicarage, but this liaison foundered. There was one child from this union, a son who died of multiple sclerosis when in his early thirties. Mr. and Mrs. Pinks had known each other since their childhood, and were married in 1940, shortly before Mr. Pinks was posted abroad. According to Mr. Pinks, their honeymoon "was a cup of tea at the local railway station". After the war, Mr. Pinks continued his employment as a heating engineer and accepted assignment all over the world, but mainly in the Middle East. Mrs. Pinks often accompanied him on his travels and revelled in the warm climates.

When he retired in 1975, they moved to their present address. Mr. Pinks described his wife as a very self conscious girl when younger. She was, he said, very private person. She had changed during their marriage and he felt he had given her more confidence. Her son who died had been married, and his children visited them regularly. Mr. Pinks appeared to be very fond of them. One gained the impression of a couple who had had a long and happy marriage. Mr. Pinks seemed to be a devoted husband, although he himself was now very ill and had just had a major operation.

Mrs. Pinks behaviour began to deteriorate in 1991. She began to get very forgetful. Her GP. referred her to the psychogeriatrician in April 1991. She was seen in July 1991, as a day patient in the setting. On examination, her MTS was 2/9. A diagnosis of dementia was given. She began attending the day hospital one day

a week after diagnosis, and, again, as with other informants, this steadily increased until she was attending five days a week. A mental test was given again in September 1991 with an MTS of 5/10. This rise in this score may have been due to her more settled mood in the setting. Mrs. Pinks also had regular respite care. In August 1992 she was again tested, using the Crighton Royal Behavioural Rating Scale (CRBRS) which gave dementia score of 3 and a dependency score of 13. In September 1992, during a period of respite care, an MSQ was applied, giving a score of 5/10.

Mr. Pinks found life hard, but his ready sense of humour helped him to cope with his lot. He tended to let Mrs. Pinks "poodle about the place" although, as he said, he could never find anything afterwards. He chose her clothes and laid them all out for her each morning, making sure they were all colour co-ordinated. He found many of his wife's habits very annoying:

It's upsetting when she keeps on. I could strangle her at times!

His increasing bad health had made him question his ability to care for his wife at home. His health continued to deteriorate as Mrs. Pinks behaviour began to decline. Mrs. Pinks entered a long stay psychogeriatric nursing home in February 1993, approximately eleven months after our first interview. Her husband was happy about this move and continued to visit her regularly. He became a great favourite with the staff.

Mr. Robert Biddley

Mr. Biddley was a small, dark haired, and very active man who was aged sixty six years at the beginning of the investigation. He was the youngest informant. Mr. Biddley had never married. He had been engaged many years ago when he was forty, to a girl aged eighteen, but this engagement had been broken. He lived alone in a bungalow which he had built for himself and his future wife in 1966, in a small village approximately three miles from the setting. Before this, he had remained living with his mother. Just prior to the commencement of the investigation, he had moved into a psychogeriatric wing of a local authority home for the elderly.

Mr. Biddley was the youngest child of five. He had two brothers and two sisters. His father was a plasterer who according to a childhood friend "was down the pub most nights". The family suffered because of his father's drinking habits and often went without. His father died young, due to alcohol abuse, long before the second world war. Mr. Biddley was very close to his mother and cared for her throughout her long illness, until her death in 1984. He maintained regular contact with his two sisters who were very fond of him.

Mr. Biddley worked all his life for British Rail, except for a short period in the Army during the war. He worked long hours and was always willing to do overtime. He was always careful with money. He appeared to have few friends and his childhood friend described him as a loner. He received early retirement on medical

grounds, after forty four years of service, due to pre senile dementia.

He was well known to the setting, having received treatment for depression and anxiety in 1981. This was felt to be due to the strain of caring for his mother. In 1987 he was diagnosed as having mild depression and possible pre-senile dementia. A battery of tests was administered by a psychologist in the setting who concluded that the results indicated that 'this was an extremely poor performance for a man of his age group'. In May 1988, he went into a large teaching hospital for a series of neurological tests, one of which was a CT. scan. The CT. scan indicated primary degenerative dementia. He continued to have regular monitoring appointments as an outpatient under the care of the psychogeriatrician. In August 1989 he saw the registrar. He told him:

My memory is not as good as it used to be.

At this time he began attending the day hospital. His social worker, who was very conscientious, monitored the situation in the community with great care. Mr. Biddley's behaviour began to give cause for concern. His home began to be very neglected and dangerous. He hoarded everything, including perishable foods.He continued his life long habits of walking everywhere, but began to find himself unable to remember where he lived.

In March 1992 the decision was made to legally admit him to residential care. In September 1992 a mental test was applied,

giving a MTS of 3/10. In October of the same year, the situation broke down due to his increasingly difficult behaviour. In November 1992 he was admitted to the same establishment as Mrs. Pinks, although Mr. Biddley lived in the specially built wing for the more severely affected sufferers of dementia. His sisters continued to visit him regularly in the nursing home.

Mr. Andrew Coxley

Mr. Coxley was a very pleasant, mildly confused man who was aged seventy six years at the beginning of the investigation. He lived with his wife in a small isolated village, approximately five miles from the setting. They had been married for nearly fifty one years and had two children, a boy and a girl. Both children had married and had left home.

Mr. Coxley had had a hard life. He was the eldest of three children and he had two younger sisters, one of whom died in childhood. His father was a farm labourer and they lived in a tied cottage, deep in the countryside. His mother had been mentally ill for most of his childhood. She appeared to have had possible severe post natal depression. Mr. Coxley thought she had had "milk fever and it turned her brain". She often went missing and the family had to search the area for her.

On one occasion she was found face down in a stream, but was rescued before she drowned. The family would search the railway line, and other dangerous places for her when she disappeared. Sometimes they would raise the well cover if she was not found

within a reasonable time. The family never knew what mood she would be in from one day to the next. After spells in various institutions, she was admitted to one of the wards in the setting when she was in her fifties. She spent some years in the setting and died when Mr. Coxley was in his forties. He visited her regularly until her death, riding his bicycle each way.

Mr. Coxley himself, became a farm labourer when he left school. He loved his work, although the wages were very poor. He became an active member of the National Union of Farm Workers and spent much of his free time pedalling around the local villages, collecting the union dues and disbursing monies to families in distress.

After twenty one years, he was forced to leave farm work owing to his increasing ill health. He had suffered for most of his life from ulcerative colitis. This condition worsened and he was unable to cope with the hard physical work of the farm. He tried to work in agricultural retail outlets, but his progressively worsening illness eventually made this too difficult and embarrassing for him. In 1978 he underwent surgery, which left him with an ileostomy. Both Mr. and Mrs. Coxley perceived this operation as changing their lives for the better. Shortly before this event Mr. Coxley was opening his bowels some twenty plus times a day. They could go nowhere unless they were within a short distance of a public convenience.

In 1990 Mr. Coxley had a relatively minor CVA. Although he appeared to recover well from this event, it left him with some

impaired memory. In 1992 he was referred by his GP to the psychogeriatrician who saw him in April 1992 in his outpatient clinic. An MMSE was administered giving a score of 14/30 and he was diagnosed as having MID. He began attending the setting two days a week. During the course of the investigation this increased to three days a week.

His wife acted as the main carer with little call on available resources, other than day care in the setting. She was devoted to her husband, and would keep him at home if he showed any signs of ill-health. Their daughter visited regularly and assisted them by taking her mother shopping, running any errands, and being on call for any emergencies. One gained the impression of a closely tight knit and supportive family unit. Mrs. Coxley made it very clear that she would continue to care for her husband at home for as long as she was able to do so. At the completion of the investigation, this was still the case and Mr. Coxley remained living in his own home, due entirely to the unceasing efforts of his wife.

Mr. Melvin Rider

Mr. Rider was a large, tall man who was aged sixty five years of age at the commencement of the investigation. He lived with his wife, in a pleasant house set in a village approximately one and a half miles from the setting. They had been married for thirty nine years and had two children a boy and a girl. Their son was a lieutenant commander in the Navy and was unmarried, their daughter was a mathematician who lived in the north of the

country. She had two children.

Mr. Rider was born an only child, in Yorkshire. His mother was a teacher and his father was a railway clerk. His mother appeared to have high expectations of her son, who amply rewarded her endeavours to enable him to achieve. He won a scholarship to an Oxbridge university where he gained a degree in physics. After university, he did his national service in the Navy and decided to make it his career. He had various prestigious postings all over the world including a spell at NATO. He left the Navy in 1966 and commenced his teaching career, culminating as the head of the physics department in a local grammar school.

In February 1983 his GP. referred him to the principal psychologist based at the psychiatric hospital, giving a tentative diagnosis of dementia. He was then aged fifty seven years of age. He had been very depressed the whole of the preceding year and had long periods of sick leave. He kept trying to return but was unable to cope with the demands of his job. His wife described him as "always being a perfectionist, always trying to give every endeavour one hundred per cent".

Following the referral to the clinical psychologist, in March 1983, he underwent a battery of tests which indicated patchy, but severe, memory deficits. The next month he also had a CT. scan which indicated no abnormal changes in brain structures. The neurologist concluded that the results were not excessive as a normal finding in a man of his age.

In 1985 he had an isotope scan and again the results were inconclusive. His wife, who was herself very intelligent, felt that there was more to his illness than depression, she obtained various literature on the subject of dementia, and in 1986 asked the psychiatrist to transfer her husband to the psychogeriatrician who saw him in April 1986. Mr. Rider's hospital notes indicate that he managed to answer most informal questions which tested his recall, but there was some noticeable hesitancy. Further, there was marked evidence of repetitiveness with good recall of the distant past. A diagnosis of DAT was given. Mrs. Rider described this period of her life as:

A muddily horrible time. It's no good tearing yourself apart. You put your emotions away and pull down the blinds.

She wished her children lived nearer. She felt that would give her more support. Mr. Rider began attending the setting three times a week but again this increased to five times a week during the course of the investigation. She also had the services of a sitter from the Alzheimer's Disease sitting service one afternoon a week. Mrs. Rider used this time to socialise with her friends. Prior to Mr. Rider's illness they had had a wide variety of interests. They belonged to the amateur operatic society, where they both enjoyed choral singing. Both of them liked classical music and going to concerts. They were committed Anglicans and involved in church activities. Mr. Rider had also enjoyed DIY, car maintenance and gardening.

Again as with other carers, Mrs. Rider saw the future as bleak.

Her own health was deteriorating as her husband showed an ever increasing reluctance to let her out of his sight. She found the strain to be very hard. She saw the future:

As stretching a long way ahead. If he continues to deteriorate as slowly as he has been doing, then it will mean me just giving more of my time than I do. If some kind of watershed occurs, I know I won't cope regardless, come what may. I've had ten years of it. However, you commit yourself to someone for better or worse.

Mr. Rider's condition continued to worsen over the next year and a half and, in spite of increased periods of respite care, Mrs. Rider was unable to cope with the demands of her husband. Very reluctantly, she decided that she could no longer manage and Mr. Rider entered Willow ward in September 1993. Mrs. Rider had managed to care for him at home for eleven and a half years.

Mr. Hugh Raft

Mr. Raft was a short, grey haired man with a moustache, who was aged seventy two years at the commencement of the investigation. He lived with his second wife in her privately owned home set on the outskirts of a large council estate, approximately one and a half miles from the setting. The house itself was immaculately maintained and very comfortable. Mr. and Mrs. Raft had been married for one year. They had both been widowed. Mrs. Raft and her previous husband had known the Rafts for forty two years.

Mrs. Raft had three children from her first marriage and Mr. Raft had two children. One was a daughter and the other was a son whom he and his wife had adopted. Mr. Raft's first wife had died of Alzheimer's Disease. His daughter continued to visit her father on a weekly basis. The son maintained little contact with Mr. Raft.

Mr. Raft had had a very unhappy childhood. He and his sister were born out of wedlock. His mother had then married his stepfather and had several children by him. His stepfather appeared to have been a drunken bully who beat Mr. Raft regularly. Mr. Raft was terrified of him. His mother did not intervene. Their home circumstances were very poor.

Mr. Raft escaped by joining the Army where he did well and eventually attained the rank of sergeant major. On leaving the Army, he became a caretaker for a social service setting until his retirement. Due to his wife's increasing poor health, they were then awarded a part two warden flat, in the middle of the town. His second wife visited them there regularly. After the first Mrs. Raft died in 1990, she began to look after Mr. Raft. He spent much of his free time at her house, going home only to sleep.

When he asked her to marry him in 1991, approximately six months after his first wife's death, Mrs. Raft agreed. She had lived alone for nine years since the death of her husband and was lonely. She felt she could care for Mr. Raft and help him. She was adamant that she did not know that he was suffering from dementia. This, however, was not the opinion of the hospital

staff. It was a matter of record that she had been told of this probability by the community psychiatric nurse, but had chosen to ignore their warnings. His behaviour since their marriage horrified her. She found his personal habits totally repugnant. She had made it clear, prior to their marriage, that there was to be no intimate relationship between them. Mr. Raft however, frightened and disgusted her with his unmet demands for a "full married life".

His GP. referred him to the psychogeriatrician in November 1991 and he was seen in the setting on January 10th 1992. A cognition test was administered giving a result of 6/10. He was also seen, together with his wife, at the memory clinic on January 31st 1992. His Camdex scores were 72/107, and the MMSE score was 20/30. He was diagnosed as having DAT with no evidence of MID, but his blood pressure was 180/95.

In view of the problems experienced by Mrs. Raft he was referred to social services. Shortly after this time a case conference was called, in which Mrs. Raft spoke very openly to those present of her problems. Mr. Raft was prescribed medication which quietened his libido, but his behaviour continued to worry her. She described herself as "being full of nerves". She regretted marrying him very much. She said that she had lost many of her friends and that she felt on her guard the whole time:

He drives me screaming mad. Sometimes I scream at him, I can't help it.

Mr. Raft began attending the setting in July 1992, some three months after the commencement of the investigation. He attended three times a week and was often to be seen crying quietly. After some months in the setting, he expressed a wish to be somewhere where he was more useful. He was then offered day care in a psychogeriatric wing of a local authority home. He began to experience "little blackouts" when out with his wife. After a few months in this setting, he again expressed dissatisfaction and his social worker found him a placement with the gardening service of the setting. He eventually gave this up and remained at home with his wife.

During the autumn/winter of 1993 his behaviour became increasingly disturbed. His blackouts began to increase in severity, and his wife could no longer cope. He then commenced short term residential care at a local authority home for the elderly. He was later transferred to the assessment ward of the local psychiatric hospital, and at the beginning of 1994, it was decided to eventually place him in the same psychogeriatric nursing home as Mrs. Pinks and Mr. Biddley.

4.4. CONCLUSION

The brief description of the settings has hopefully permitted a greater understanding of the resources available to the informants and their families. The short descriptions of the informants, based on information given by their friends, professional carers and close kin, will have given a brief thumbnail sketch of the informants and their lives. This will be

the subject of further expansion in their case-studies, when all informants tell their own stories.

Their narratives suggest, in many cases, different perspectives to those offered by their main carers. Their transcribed words permits some understanding of the world of the dementia sufferer through the recall of their narratives, a recall of their own life stories.

CHAPTER FIVE

THE CASE-STUDIES

5.1 INTRODUCTION

This chapter contains an account of the case-studies produced during this investigation, together with an evaluation of the method used to generate such findings. There will then be a meta analysis of the arguments contained in each case-study. The conclusion to this chapter then draws together the findings of the individual case-studies.

5.2 GENERAL CHARACTERISTICS OF THE CASE-STUDIES

Eight case-studies were produced from the series of recorded and transcribed interviews conducted with the eight informants. The number of interviews with each informant varied between thirteen and twenty five, over a period of five to seventeen months. However, the meetings between the interviewer and informants took place over a twelve to twenty four months period (see appendix two, schedule of interviews). The quantity of interviews depended on a number of variables. These were the severity of the illness, the ease of access to informants, and the death of informants.

The case-studies, too, vary in length from, approximately, nine thousand to twelve thousand words. Neither does their length totally reflect the degree of cognitive impairment of informants, or the timespan of recorded and transcribed interviews. The longest case-study concerns the most severely impaired informant, who was

interviewed over a period of seven months.

The format of the case-studies follows the interviews. The introduction gives a brief description of the informant and the date of the first meeting. The context and content of the first interview are described in some detail. By the second or third interview, possible emergent themes from informant's conversations are discussed and are validated, or refuted, during subsequent interviews. Not all themes were clearly identified at this stage, but developed as the investigation progressed. These themes are related to the emotional memories of informants and are validated through the informants recalling them on a number of occasions. These memories are, therefore, important to the informants and occupy a central place in their narratives. All informants recalled emotional memories. However, the clarity, content, and recall, varied between all informants. These differences were reflected in the background of informants.

Dissimilarities Between Informants

Although all informants suffered from dementia, the effects of this disease were dissimilar. Not all informants suffered from Alzheimer's disease. Some informants type of dementia were associated with stroke. Further, some informants were more severely compromised by their dementia. Speech was also affected. Other informants were less compromised. Background information given during chapter four, and at the beginning of the case-studies, suggests that no informant lived in a state of poverty or hardship. Most had attained a comfortable standard of living through their commitment to hard

work, but many had had unequal opportunities in education and opportunities for advancement. One informant, Mr. Rider had achieved academically due to his intelligence and the support of his family. Mr. Coxley did not have this support. Further, family traditions possibly added some gentle persuasion to his decision to become a farm labourer. Another informant, Mr. Raft, also experienced poor life chances and their consequential effects. However, even Mr. Coxley and Mr. Raft's traumatic childhoods were dissimilar. Mr. Coxley's deprivations were caused by his mother's long standing illness, whereas Mr. Raft's deprivations were caused by deliberate abuse. Nonetheless, both were victims and suffered hardships during this time.

There were also contrasts in the relationships that they had with significant others. Some had good relationships, others were of a poorer quality. Mrs. Woodley and Mr. Coxley were fortunate in their relationships, although these were enhanced by the physical well-being of their spouses. It is only these two informants who remain living in the community, at the closure of the investigation. Mr. Biddley, on the other hand, had few significant relationships and was the first informant to enter into long term residential care. This brief discussion of the dissimilarities between informants gives some indication of their singularity. They had, however, many commonalities.

Similarities Between Informants

There were similarities between informants, other than the very overt nature of their diagnosis and use of the setting. Firstly, the findings

suggest that all informants recalled emotional, albeit fragmented, memories from their past. Over time, these memories cohered into parts of their life story, or narrative. All informants were recalling stories in which they played the central role. These stories of the self gave informants a sense of narrative identity which was lost as the illness progressed. Secondly, it is further suggested that all informants appeared to enjoy the process of the interviews, although some experienced more evident enjoyment than others. Further, all informants, without exception, experienced a marked increase in levels of well-being. For some, this increase in well-being continued after the conclusion of the interviews.

Therapeutic outcomes are difficult to measure other than through anecdotal report. However, most investigations which focus on this area, require more precise methods in order to evaluate therapeutic outcomes, and to meet the needs of scientific appraisal. The use of the extended single case-study method may be one approach that meets this need. The use of this method, during this work, permitted a more intense and exact indication of the beneficial effects narrated by all informants. Although, again, anecdotal in nature, these self reports were given over a long period of time by a group of people who, according to Kitwood (1990a), because of their cognitive impairments, are less capable of deliberate subterfuge.

5.3 AN EVALUATION OF THE METHOD

The first issue that must be addressed during this section concerns the effectiveness of the method chosen for this study. Was it appropriate for this investigation? Did it work? A generalised

examination of the findings indicates that the approach used by the interviewer, did permit all informants to recall their past, and the use of case-study methodology allowed these memories to be shared with others. An overview of the findings, therefore, suggests that this method was appropriate, given the nature of this research.

With regards to the effectiveness of data analysis, the use of grounded theory methods indicated several significant themes and categories. Further, this method led to the emergence of the core category, that of the importance of informant's self stories or narratives during dementia. The chosen method for data analysis appears to be an appropriate and effective tool for this task.

A more detailed examination of the case-studies, suggests that the structure of these reports are based on the precepts necessary for the compilation of a psychological case-study as advocated by Bromley (1986). However, his stringent requirements for truthful, accurate and evaluative accounts, are the subjects of further scrutiny throughout this chapter. Although the case-studies are 'truthful' and 'accurate' in the sense that the reported conversations did take place, as is supported by the recording and transcription of data, the concerns of truth, accuracy and evaluation form part of narrative truth, which itself rests on informant and researcher interpretation, and is the subject of extensive discussion during chapter three of this work. The interpretations of informants meanings, offered by the researcher/interviewer, may well be open to alternative points of view.

This is one possible area of concern. Another is the attitude of the

interviewer towards all informants. The case-studies show that all informants were interviewed over a substantial period of time. Most interviews began in April 1992, and some continued until 1994. Not only are the case-studies a record of informants narratives, they are also the story of the relationships that existed between the interviewer and individual informants. It is possible that the strength of these long standing relationships may have exerted a positive bias on the interviewer's account of the informants. These areas of concern are important issues which will be addressed throughout an examination of individual case-studies.

Further Areas of Consideration

A further concern is the possibility of bias in the interviewer's interpretation of informant's responses. Moreover, it could be suggested that the interviewer asked leading questions and encouraged the informants to give answers/replies which would conform to the interviewer's own expectations. These latter concerns are serious objections which must be addressed prior to any further examination of the findings.

The brief discussion of the counselling techniques used in this investigation indicates that the counsellor will often ask exploratory questions in order to aid client disclosure. These exploratory questions, together with the use of advanced accurate empathy, can also sound like leading questions. However, interviews with informants were not solely psychotherapeutic interviews, they were, primarily, investigative interviews which contained elements of counselling principles. As such, the suggestion that the interviewer

may have 'over' led informants is worthy of examination. An evaluation of the evidence indicates that this may have occurred during interviews with Mrs. Woodley and others:

Int. And then you worked on the burns unit

AW. Mm.

Int. You must have seen some terrible burns there.

AW. Oh the burns were horrible!

Mr. Silverthorne disliked some of the activities in the setting. The interviewer asked if he found them childish. He agreed they were:

Int. Do you not like playing things, if you think they're silly?

RS. Of course they are!

Int. Of course they are?

RS. Yes.

Int. So some of the games are silly?

RS. Yes.

The interviewer encouraged Mrs. Pinks to say that she liked children:

Int. So that was your job was it to be a nanny?

BP. ***Yes (BP. gave a little chuckle)*** **That's right!**

Int. So you've always liked children.

BP. Yes...I quite enjoyed looking after children....

Int. You seem as if you would. You've got that kind of personality.

BP. Perhaps so!

However, there were many times when this did not happen, as is shown by the interviewer's own response. The interviewer thought Mr. Biddley might feel some anger over his present situation. Mr. Biddley denied this:

RB. Yes, because most people in my predicament, they get to know the other people and, you know, they do the best they can! And that's all there is to it, isn't it!
Int. So it doesn't make you angry?
RB. No! because I used to be as really sharp as a tack!

Mr. Coxley caused the interviewer some surprise over his introduction and recall of a current political scandal. He was not expected to have so good a memory. Further, he had introduced the subject himself. The interviewer was momentarily thrown by his comments and could not, immediately, think of a reply:

Int. Oh be...Let it be....Mmm ... You don't think they should have put it in the papers?

Mr. Raft, the final informant, did not agree with the interviewer's interpretation of his view of the Army. He was quick to correct her:

Int. Did that make you feel safe being in the Army?
HR. Not particularly. No..I just ..I loved the Army! I joined when I was seventeen I think it was.

Although the interviewer may have appeared, on occasions, to have led informants during the interviews, the evidence suggests that

these questions were more exploratory in nature Thus, there are strong indications within the case-studies that the major outcomes of this work rest on meanings given by the informants. Moreover, all informants conversations and stories should be considered against the backdrop of their narrative. To select partial extracts is, itself, misleading. However, these concerns will be given careful consideration during the scrutiny of individual case-studies.

Further Considerations of the Approach Used by the Interviewer

Further examination of the case-studies themselves, indicate that there may be some confusion over the value of the approach used by the interviewer. Is this particular interviewing technique needed to discover the life story of older people with dementia? One might argue that if no narrative is present in memory, possession of the best interviewing techniques in the world would be to no avail. The final interviews with Mrs. Pinks and Mr. Biddley, in which the dissolution of their sense of narrative identity is clearly shown, indicate some support for this argument. It is possible, therefore, to view the presence of story as all important, and the approach used throughout this study, as a necessary skill or tool.

Further evaluation of the approach used by the interviewer suggests that the interviewer's attitude to informants could have swayed and biased the interviews and subsequent interpretations. All eight case-studies portray the informants as very likeable people. It is possible that the interviewer's own admitted positive bias towards older people has influenced these reports. Although, as an interviewer engaged in this type of research, one is expected to have high levels of respect for

informants, it might be said that that the interviewer viewed the informants with too kind an eye. Moreover, the strength of the relationships led to a deep understanding of the informants, and it is difficult for dislike to flourish in these circumstances. Nevertheless, it is important to be aware of this characteristic of the case-studies during subsequent evaluations.

These, and other analytic concerns, will be addressed throughout a discussion of the case-studies of the eight informants who took part in this investigation. Following the presentation of informants, given in appendix three, it is proposed to discuss the findings from each informant in accordance with this format. The first case-study to be examined will be that of Mrs. Abigail Woodley (AW.). Appendix two, (schedule of interviews), indicates that AW. was seen by the interviewer from April 1992 until July 1993, with a total of twenty five recorded and transcribed interviews. As with all of the informants, there were more meetings than this number would suggest.

5.4 MRS. ABIGAIL WOODLEY

The narrative of this informant suggests that AW. was a moderately demented, timid, and fearful lady who had an uneasy relationship with her mother. Although her mother had died, AW. persisted in seeing her as still very much alive. AW. was extremely frightened of her mother, and the evidence suggests that the psychotherapeutic approach used during the interviews allowed her to explore her life-story and emotional memories concerning her mother. Further, this exploration appeared to unravel the twisted bonds between her

memories of her mother and AW's low self esteem. The series of interviews concludes with AW. indicating that she had increased levels of well-being and personhood, as is shown through her increased self confidence and expressed feelings of happiness, together with little obvious concern over her mother's whereabouts. These positive outcomes were substantiated by staff in the setting.

Given the initial criticisms of this work, however, one must ask if this is the only possible explanation for these positive outcomes? Indeed, it is also possible to question the basic premise of the case-study. Was AW. still frightened of her mother, or is there some other explanation of her fear?

The first of the transcribed interviews with AW. indicate that she freely introduced the topic of her mother:

Int. Do you see your daughter very often?
AW. Oh yes. It's also centred round my mother.
Int. Oh I see.
AW. She holds the strings.

This might indicate that AW. saw her mother as a powerful person. Further, this interview, as described in her case-study, suggests that AW. did not have a happy childhood:

AW. She [mother] did say to me... well the last time we two had a conversation, she kept on saying "Oh thank goodness when these days are over, I just cannot stand them. It's about time these children grew up!"

Thus, the suggestion that AW. was in awe of her mother, and that she may have had somewhat negative memories of her childhood, would appear to rest on AW's interpretation of meaning, rather than that of the interviewer. Further, it will be recalled that her problematic relationship with her mother was supported by AW.'s husband. He disclosed that her mother had been a difficult person who worried AW. The following interviews indicated AW.'s fear and dislike of her mother:

AW. I shouldn't get too friendly with her!

Int. I thought I should be frightened to death of her! Because all of you had to do what she said.

AW. Oh Yes! Sss! *(AW laughed).* Where'd you put that stick yesterday?

Int. Was she like that?

AW. She had a real cane, you know..

Int. Mmm....Did you ever feel you disliked her?

AW. Oh yes! Ooh, there's not a lot of liking about it!

AW. further disclosed that she disliked arguments and loud voices:

AW. I was ! Ah it was terrible!..And any horrible job that wanted doing either my mother or my father did it and then they used to stand up and have a row. *(Row was said as if it was a nasty word)* Oh gosh what can you do with them!

Int. So you've never liked nasty atmospheres then, have you?

AW. No! No.

AW. She [mother] does shout ! I must admit that!

Int. She's got a loud voice?

AW. Mm. It frightens me you know!

Int. When she shouts?

AW. Mm.

It was a relief when her mother died, although AW. did not like admitting this:

Int. You must have felt quite relieved when she died really...

AW. Well I was! I mean, well it's an awful thing to have to say isn't it, about your own mother?

Again, the interpretations of the main themes of AW's life rest upon her own words. She frequently referred to her 'worrying nature' throughout the series of interviews. However, her worries appeared to stem from memories of her mother.

AW. I do worry! It's no good to say I don't. I do! I'm always worried about her.

AW. Oh I....Oh, yes. I managed to keep it in there. ***(AW. pointed to her chest).***

Int. Do you think it is your mother who made you a nervous lady?

AW. I think so really! I know it's unkind to say I suppose, but I used to be able to hear her shout from one end of the house to the other.

When AW. was asked if she thought she would ever forget about her mother, she replied:

AW. No....Little things come back in my mind every now and again, you know, and it was " What are you doing up here? You'll have to go on downstairs out of the way. I can't be troubled with you!" And things like that, you know. I mean, it hurts!

Int. Oh yes.....So all your memories of your mum they're..they're hurtful memories are they?

AW. Yes...Oh yes!

The case-study gives many examples of AW.'s lack of self esteem. AW. felt full of 'badness'. She did not feel good at anything and was surprised that people in the setting liked her. She saw herself as having little courage. When asked if she ever wanted to drive, she replied that she had no courage for that. She said that she thought about her mother every day. AW. felt it was her mother who had made her nervous:

Int. You carry it on your shoulder.....So a born worrier?

AW. Mm.....

Int. Probably your mum started that off though, wasn't it?

AW. Oh yes!

Int. Because if you were brought up like that.....

AW. It follows doesn't it?

AW.'s final sentence suggests that she followed the conversation and agreed with the interviewer's interpretations. The evidence, so far,

indicates that the significant themes of AW.'s life, as suggested by the interviewer, appear to be correct. This is substantiated by the words of this informant. However, during the tenth interview, AW. spoke of her shame at having to disclose her feelings concerning her mother:

Int. And we've talked about your relationship with your mother a lot.

AW. That was awful wasn't it?!...Oh I felt awful!

Int. It was your mother who helped you feel like that...

AW. Mm...Yes.....

Int. But she's gone now.....

AW. Shame isn't it?

Int. Shame she's gone, or a shame that she was so horrible?

AW. That I was..I was ashamed to think that, you know, I had to ....sort of talk to people and.....

Int. About your mother?

AW. Mm.

The interviewer suggested that this was a significant conversation, in that AW. was able to recall that she had spoken of her mother in detail and that, on some level, the disclosures had been beneficial for her. The interviewer claimed that this recall is, perhaps, challenging to existing knowledge as dementia negatively affects both short term and long term memory structures and processes, although the decline is most evident in short term memory.

Further, the interviewer argued that these recalled memories of AW. were comparatively recent and, as such, would not be expected to be

so readily available. The interviewer suggested that it might be possible to tentatively suggest that the highly emotional content, and personal meaning of AW.'s story of her mother, in some way, allowed her to retain and access these memories, in spite of inhibiting damage to neural structures and pathways. This finding is of some significance and should be carefully examined. Scrutiny of the actual conversation indicates that, at the beginning of the conversation, AW. may have tried to say that speaking of her negative feelings concerning her mother made her feel uncomfortable:

Int. And we've talked about your relationship with your mother a lot.

AW. That was awful wasn't it?!...Oh I felt awful!

Further, the interviewer offered AW. a choice of meanings:

AW. Shame isn't it?

Int. Shame she's gone, or a shame that she was so horrible?

AW. chose neither of these interpretations:

AW. That I was..I was ashamed to think that, you know, I had to ....sort of talk to people and.....

Int. About your mother?

AW. Mm.

AW., therefore, gave meaning to her own words, and explained her meaning to the interviewer. The conclusions which must be drawn, given the evidence, is that AW. did recall recently speaking of her

mother to the interviewer, and that it was, possibly, the emotions surrounding her memories of her relationship with her mother, which generated this recall.

As the interviews progressed AW. appeared to experience increased levels of well-being. She said that she used to hide her feelings and worries:

AW. No! *(AW. laughed joyously)* I used to tuck them away! Written on a piece of paper!..

AW. Oh yes! You must get rid of these feelings mustn't you, that hurt you...

AW. reported feeling happier and having more confidence:

AW. No I've....Well I can definitely say I do feel happy now! Really happy!

AW. Well, I I sh sh sort of felt..... sort of more confident!

The evidence for AW.'s increased levels of well-being would appear to be strong, supported as it is by her own words and the staff in the setting. However, the interviewer does suggest that the psychotherapeutic approach used throughout the investigation, together with the process of the interviews, allowed AW. to resolve her troubled memories of her mother. This resolution aided and encouraged well-being and personhood. The interviewer argues that AW's own words, from one of the final interviews, support this thesis:

Int. **Do you think about the old days at all?**

AW. **No!**

Int. **No...Just about now.....**

AW. ***(AW. interrupted interviewer)*** **I've got no...I've got no regrets as to where my mother is or.....has gone or, you know.....**

Int. **Ah.....**

AW. **But....you know, for a week or two I was quite upset.**

It is possible that this is not the only explanation for this finding. It could be argued that the memory loss due to the process of dementia may have been responsible for this loss of anxiety concerning her mother. AW. may no longer have possessed many negative memories of her mother. However, AW. did recall that she had been upset. Further, she spontaneously spoke of her mother without immediate prompting. Nevertheless, the effects of dementia are well documented, and it is impossible to state, without reservation, that AW. had reached a stage of resolution that was entirely due to the interventions used during the interviews. However, neither is it possible to dismiss the arguments that resolution did occur, and that this was largely due to the psychotherapeutic approach used during this investigation.

Although an examination of this particular case-study suggests that this informant was held in high regard by the interviewer, the use of the informant's own words to tell her story does minimise biased interpretations. This, of course, applies to all informants. Moreover, the data largely support the interpretations given by the interviewer/researcher. Nevertheless, it is impossible to

unconditionally concur with all interpretations, due to the present imprecise knowledge of this illness and processes. However, this informant did indicate a link between cognition and emotion through the recall of her emotional memories. She also gave small parts of her life history which gradually cohered into her own personal narrative, and which contained strongly emotional memories of the self. Further, AW. appeared to have enjoyed the process of the interviews and her relationship with the interviewer. Finally, this informant indicated a changed personality and clear evidence of increased well-being. She was, indeed, a different and far happier person at the conclusion of the investigation.

5.5 MR. RONNIE SILVERTHORNE

A review of the case-study of RS. indicates that he was one of more severely impaired informants in this study. His command of language had been affected by the process of dementia. This impairment of speech made the task of interpretation more difficult for the researcher, and, thus, created possibilities for faulty understanding and misinterpretation of meaning. Indeed, the interviewer admits to misunderstanding RS. on many occasions. Further, the imprecise nature of his speech meant that only the most obvious of his meanings could be interpreted. RS. met the interviewer between April 1992 and January 1993. These twenty two interviews were recorded and transcribed. The interviewer found RS. to be a reserved man who was not readily given to discussing his personal life or his emotional experiences. Further, the evidence from his case-study indicates that he appeared to be in a state of almost constant anxiety, with his concerns over his present existence far outweighing his need to

recollect his personal past. The interviewer suggested that significant themes in the life-story of RS. were his work and the respect in which he was held by his former staff. His wife and his home occupied a very important place in his life, and seemed to be his locus of safety in an unsafe present. He was frequently found to be anxious in the setting. His general attitude towards others suggested that he was a caring and responsible person. The first interview with RS. indicates that these were important topics for him and appeared to remain so throughout most of the investigation. He frequently spoke of his wife and recalled her name:

RS. Lillian Rose, yes

Int. Lillian Rose.

RS. Yes and a very nice smart word she is too

Int. A very nice smart.....?

He spoke of his work. He recalled that he had worked as a manager for a large local department store, and, in the past, had worked for other stores:

Int. You actually er.. em... worked. Your job was... you worked at Sutors didn't you, and Harrods?

RS. (*RS. interrupted)* Yes,that's right. That was...That's only one though.

RS. also introduced the topic of his former staff, and of the pleasure he felt during their greetings when they met. He mentioned this during subsequent interviews:

RS. **Yes. Was general manager from, at the other ones. It would be er shall we say *(Disordered speech)* I was stayed with er, with them longer than I would of done. I had a very good staff.**

RS. **They were all there .... and I er was walking across the road. They pick over the road, come across the road to say hello.**

Int. **After you left.**

RS. **Yes, oh yes!**

RS. **Yes, for a long time they still come along and cross the road and say "Hello Mr. Silverthorne". It very nice, it was pleasant! Think that they would do it! And then they carried on, but it's been a long time since I er...done it.**

Int. **Means a lot to you when your old staff say hello doesn't it?**

RS. **Yes.**

RS. also indicated his concern over leaving the setting, and his desire to return to his wife and home:

Int. **So do you worry that you will miss the bus?**

RS. **I do of course! Cause I've been a long time on it.**

Int. **Do you feel you've been here a long time?**

RS. **I <u>know</u> I've been here a long time, yes!**

Int. **Do you worry about missing the car to take you home?**

RS. **Well yes 'cause you got me wife at home.**

Int. **So you miss her when you are here do you?**

RS. **Yes.**

The discussion of hospital transport led him to remember the reasons for the giving up of his own car:

RS. **.....Er er...the wife said it was a very good idea, er I had to agree with her em and get rid of it, but it was sim, it was quite a pull.**

Int. **Oh I'm sure it was a pull! Did it make you feel bad when you got rid of it?**

RS. **No er side because if it hit somebody and killed em, I'd be <u>more</u> than sad!**

Int. **Yes. Yes .....**

RS. **Wouldn't I?**

This apparent concern for others was substantiated by his story of the store that burnt down. RS. implied that he was very relieved that no one was hurt:

RS. **.....so I went to er away from that. *(Disordered speech)*.....very good....came all the way. Saves. Thank God for that .**

Although RS. was described as a caring person, the interviewer suggested that he had an authoritarian personality due, in part, to the nature of his work. He did appear to treat the interviewer on occasions as if she was a member of his staff. He made it clear when he wished the interviews to end:

RS. **You Madam, sit there!**

RS. Well that's it Madam, you see! Cause you said you got a date night, if I can't get there, get that... get my anorak but....

RS But now I think I'm going to stop, because I don't know how much I've said!

The interviewer found RS. to be an unhappy and highly anxious man who found great difficulty in coping with the loss of autonomy due to his illness. His following words appear to support this view:

Int. Well you're used to being in charge aren't you? You're used to telling other people what to do.
RS. Oh yes! Well that's it's gone from glory hasn't it?

However, RS. was still able to able to assert his authority at times:

Int. Do you feel you're made to do things? Do you think people make you do things?
RS. Like to!

There is some evidence to indicate that he felt powerless and less able to control others:

RS. Well it's...I've left it off for a long time. I've said I'd like like to do it again, but I don't suppose I will!

Int. You'd rather be at home?
RS. Well you don't get it as easy as that!

As with other informants, RS. appeared to enjoy the interviews and his relationship with the interviewer

RS. Anyway, it's pleasant seeing you for a spot!

As the investigation progressed, facets of his conversations indicated an apparent lucidity when Mr. Silverthorne was speaking of emotionally meaningful events. It appeared to be relatively easy to understand his messages at this time, thus indicating that strong emotions overcame the speech deficits caused by his illness. However, RS. usually managed to make himself well understood. His cognitive processes appeared more intact than his speech deficits would suggest. He could still recall the giving up of his car, with some assistance from the interviewer:

RS. Yes, er I've got no.. co... cart now.
Int. No car no. You had to give it up didn't you?
RS. No.
Int. Mm?
RS. No. Didn't gave it up. Happens sometimes .....
Int. Do you miss your car?
RS. Oh yeah! It's long time ago now. I was thought about it and said I'd like to do it again, but em I well I first did it, I first packed it up and er cider er off straight away. I didn't want, didn't want re rill kill this other person sees.
Int. Didn't want to hurt anybody?
RS. No! No!

RS. was also able to make the interviewer understand that he was

cross with her, for leaving him to talk to another informant. It did indicate that his emotions empowered his memory and his speech processes:

RS. It blissfully..you blissfully take me these things, and you should really say Mr. Silverthorne is such and such, and er you come in as if you come in from outside and go into the ziggles. It's way I can't do it. I stay pect stay in big outside there, and take all the pieces where we going and er n not happy. Don't know where this goes...

By the sixth interview, the interviewer noted that RS.'s self stories concerning past experiences, appeared to be fading in importance. He seemed more preoccupied with present concerns. His stories concerning his work, his staff, and his car were still there, but were assuming a more shadowy substance. This fading of self stories seemed to be of some significance, and caused problems for the interviewer as the following conversation indicates. The interviewer thought that RS. wanted to run away from the setting, but he wanted the 'bus lady' to take him home.

RS. Now I wan, what I want. I really want! Most unlikely, is the er run run lady.

With the fading of memories, came the fading of concerns for others. He began to talk about driving again:

Int. Do you still miss driving car?

RS. Oh yes. I'd like to! Eventually I think I might have

it.....with champagne.....yes.

Int. You liked driving didn't you?

RS. I did, yes.....

Although many of his stories were beginning to lose content by this time, RS. was still able to surprise the interviewer by giving more content to previously told stories, as for instance, the store that burnt down:

RS. .....That was a game and a half.

Int. A game and a half was it?...It must have terrible when the police told you...

RS. Mmmm, I can't put shooting along all wrong!

Int. Got down there quick did you?

RS. Mmm....Yes it bit tight....

Int. Was it a bad fire.

RS. Well, it was bad enough.....It went right to the opposite side of the road.

However, all of his stories began to fade as his illness and the investigation progressed. He could not remember meeting his wife when they worked at Harrods:

Int. That's where you met Lillian.

RS. Long time!

Int. Long time ago.....You met Lillian there.

RS. What work did we seek to be ? *(Disorganised speech and long pause).....*

Shortly after this conversation, the effects of his illness began increase and RS. was eventually admitted to the setting as a long term patient. He died in January 1993.

The interviewer suggests that the narrative of RS. contained several important themes. Firstly, he was a very different person to AW., in that he was more contained, but less fearful. Further, he was not given to displaying his emotions as readily as AW., and he did not disclose to such a deep level, as did AW. The interviewer argues that this was mainly due to RS.'s personality, but that she did meet his psychotherapeutic needs, and encourage well-being, in part, by allowing him to control the process and content of the interviews. This, it is suggested, helped to maintain higher levels of self esteem for RS.

It is, however, impossible to say if his reluctance to disclose was due entirely to this aspect of his personality. This may have been due to the process of his illness. He may simply have no longer possessed the memories necessary for emotional disclosure. Equally, the approach used by the interviewer may not have been sufficiently experienced/skillful to encourage and allow him to disclose these memories. Alternatively, RS.'s inability to recall more of his emotional past may have been due to all of the above. This is, probably, a more realistic assessment of the situation.
Further, although it is possible to agree that the approach used during the investigation allowed RS. to experience increased well-being and to retain/enhance his self esteem, it must be argued that his present circumstances did not allow him to do so. It is, again, more realistic to suggest that this approach did not further diminish

his levels of self esteem.

Finally, the interviewer discusses the significance of his fading self stories. The case-study does suggest that his stories slid away, until they remained only as a faint outline in memory. Again, the comment is made that his emotional memories were linked to states of cognitive awareness and that RS. was able to recall tiny pieces of his personal past or narrative. These arguments appear to be supported by the evidence. Further, this case-study draws attention to the inherent difficulties in trying to gather such data from elderly people with fairly advanced dementia.

It is, at this point, that one must question the charge that the interviewer asked RS. leading questions. Did the interviewer cause RS. to respond in such a manner as to conform to interviewer interpretations? Certainly, at times, RS. was led by the interviewer. However, the total content of this case-study suggests that the themes of the discussed topics were offered by RS, himself, rather than the interviewer.

At the conclusion of this case-study, it is, again, possible to see the depth of admiration and liking that the interviewer had for this informant. However, the presentation and discussion of the data suggests that this is an honest account of the interviews held with this person. Although it is clear that the interviewer felt much sympathy for RS., it does not prevent the reader from having some understanding of the problems inherent in caring for this highly anxious and confused man.

5.6 MR. CHARLES CLERKENWELL

This informant was interviewed between June 1992 and October 1993, with a total of seventeen recorded and transcribed interviews. Although CC. had minor memory deficits, he was a very articulate person who had a fund of self stories to share with the interviewer. However, he thought of himself as a shy man who had led a dull life:

CC. I very often think that I've met a dull drool sort of existence.....

CC .....because I was a pretty shy person..
I have been shy in my time, yes. .....Believe me!

The interviewer suggests that the most significant theme for this informant was that of loss. This was concerned with the loss of his father, loss of freedom during the war when he was a prisoner of the Japanese, loss of health, and loss of independence associated with his poor eyesight and present illness. An examination of the evidence would appear to support these findings. CC. spoke readily, and at length, of these topics:

Int. Do you remember what your father did? For a living?
CC. ***(Paused)*** **He mostly ran away, I think!**
CC. The other chap was never there to sing anyway! Unless it was in jail or something! No he wasn't a very er...Oh he was a ha half sort of person. He would come on leave, dragging a hamper full of lovely rosy apples in the middle of the war...pretty precious. But er what he did between

polishing the apples, and polishing this woman behind the blackberry bush or something, that was the point! We had stuff given to us, we had all that, that's not everything.....

CC. I suppose the worse thing it's done to me is I've near enough lost my sight, hence this.... And er, I can't see prop...well....It's still a strain to see .....

CC. found it to be almost unbearably difficult to cope with poor eyesight:

CC. A blow comes with this thing. It's when.....specialist says "I'm...I'm sorry it will never better, you know". Oh thank you very much!

Int. That must have been a terrible blow...

CC. What dear?

Int. That must have been a terrible blow..

CC. Yes, it is you think, well it'll be all right one day, you know.....And then this chap in his very.. e....r what can I say his um.....thorough examination after several... well several months! .....And then I said, "Surely there must be some improvement?!" But, "I'm afraid not..Not in your case!.....Just not showing any improvement! And, after a long examination, I'm sure there will not be one!"

CC. indicated that he felt 'imprisoned' in the setting:

CC. The trouble is, I'm chained in here you see. I can't just get up and walk out.

Int. Do you get fed up with coming here?

CC. Only in the sense I like... seeing people and so.....No I like coming here but what I object to is the doors clang behind me, and there's....I have a feeling I've just walked in into Pentonville, or some..similar prison. And I can't get out again until the warder er gives a nod, you know, and says, "Right you can..."

These themes continued throughout the investigation and indeed, the last recorded interview with this informant indicated that his memories of the war remained with him:

CC. .....in that in that er er twenty odd people, women soldiers, ATS or what have you. And they were locked up, and they were raped, one by one ,whenever the Japanese felt like it.....Not very nice!

CC. You got to remember that they [Japanese] are completely and utterly different.

Int. Did you feel that you couldn't understand them?

CC. Yes, Well you can't understand people the way they....some of the things they did. Even .....so called..... um .... small things which I I mean aren't small to us.....Taking a dog and beating to death....I mean we don't look upon that as being funny or careless or anything. It's downright bloody wicked, even if it is a dog....

However, in spite of his traumatic experiences CC. still enjoyed life. He was more ready to be happy than unhappy. He felt that he had

had a good life:

CC. Yes!.....What's the good of being miserable when it's so easy to be happier?

Int. Do you think you have good life, Charlie?

CC. *(Paused).* Yes! I can't complain at all!

CC. ...Well.....I've had jolly good moments.....I've had calm and peaceful moments.....

CC. enjoyed recalling his past memories, and his relationship with the interviewer:

CC. Anything is interesting, discussing it with you!

On one occasion he sang to her, to prove he remembered her name:

Int. Do you still remember me?

CC. Course I do! *(CC. sang)* "Marie the dawn is breaking....."

CC. .....I like... seeing people and so.....er especial especially charmers! At which you're a a good er example....

He said he felt happier than he, perhaps, looked:

CC. I look miserable, but I feel inside quite jolly, yes.

Further, towards the end of the investigation he did not seem to have

such a negative view of ageing:

Int. Do you hate getting old, Charlie?

CC. *(Paused)* It's quite pleasant in its way.

During the conclusion of this case-study, the interviewer argues that this informant's life history possesses a certain clarity when compared to other informants, due to CC.'s relatively unimpaired memory. It is difficult to disagree with this argument. This case-study is full of quite complete self stories. The interviewer also points out that it is highly likely that these stories were well rehearsed, owing to CC.'s skill as a raconteur. Again, the evidence would appear to support this argument. They were the type of memories which, as CC. said, "live long in the memory of a mind", for they tended to be significantly concerned with the individual physical and psychological survival of the self. The interviewer also suggests that the intensity of effort to survive, may have created these durable memories which appeared to withstand the onslaught of dementia, almost until the end.

However, it is equally possible to suggest that it is merely the rehearsal of these memories which may have led to their remaining in memory. Equally, this informant's present circumstances reflected his past experiences. In the present he was as much a 'prisoner' of his illness, as he was as a P.O.W. It may have been his present circumstances which led to this rich recall of the past.
Finally, the interviewer, again, stresses the emotional content of CC's memories and notes the proposed link between emotion and cognition. One must agree with this conclusion, as the case-study

contains a wealth of evidence to support this finding. It is also posited that CC's stories allowed him to be readily seen as a 'whole' person, and that this gave him a sense of narrative identity. The interviewer argues that it is this sense of narrative identity which is lost during the process of dementia, and highlights the importance of the maintenance of the narrative during this illness.

Thus, it is possible to agree with most of the interpretations reached through this case-study and to suggest that the comparative ease of this exercise was due to the clarity of the informant's memories. Moreover, the question of faulty interpretation of this informant's meanings are minimised throughout this case-study, due to the detail offered by CC. However, once more, this informant is seen in a most sympathetic light, and as one who enjoyed the process of the interviews, and the interviewer/informant relationship. The interviewer suggests that, as with other informants, CC. experienced increased levels of well-being through the process of the investigation. These increased levels of well-being were evident throughout the case-study, but may have as much to do with the interviewer/informant relationship, as with the recalling of the personal narrative.

5.7 MRS. BESSIE PINKS

BP. took part in nineteen recorded and transcribed interviews between April 1992 and August 1993. She had severe memory deficits, with poor short term memory, together with impaired long term memory. She, too, was a natural story teller who had stories to tell, but these were fragmented and repetitive. However, she enjoyed

speaking of her past. The social aspects of the investigation appeared to give her pleasure.

BP. Oh, I I like listening to the other people..... I always hope to find.. who...who chat along.

BP. Yes. That's right! And meeting such a lot of different people! I think I I..like that part. I think it's nice to meet a lot of people.

It will be recalled from an evaluation of her case-study, that BP. did not like to recall unpleasant memories:

BP. Yes, Oh yes! I'm... I don't like being miserable.

BP. No...Just take things as they come.....

During this case-study, the interviewer argues that the significant topics in this informant's life were, again, those of loss. These were loss of childhood, loss of her child and loss of her memories.

BP. .....I lived in Borham Rectory before I left school.
Int. Before you left school?
BP. Yes. Because they had a maid there called Mabel, and em she kind of took a fancy to me. So I used to spend my evenings after school there, you see. And in the end I finished up by living there.

BP. I just sort of grew into the place. I used to ..I was still

going to school. They had a maid you see, she was 30 years old. Mabel. And she took a fancy to me, you see. We used to play games... card games in the evening time there. In the end I slept there, because they said I was going home late at night, you see.

BP. **Well of course I drifted into the rectory, you see. They had a maid there, Mabel. She was one of the old fashioned type maids, you know... Mabel....And when I came home from school, I used to go in there, and they used to give me all sorts of things to do....And I've just faded in there, you see..... And then I faded in to where she [Mabel] went out. Although I was still at school, I still worked there.**

Int. **So you missed your home?**

BP. **Oh yes! I missed playing outside and.....**

Int. **You became grownup before wanted to!**

BP. **I..I did! Actually I did! Yes. Because I was always looked on as a little girl, but all of a sudden I was turned into a grown woman!**

Int. **Yes..**

BP. **Just like that!**

She felt she missed a lot of her childhood by commencing work at such a young age:

BP. **Because I er I er.... None of this running out and round the streets after school. That that was wiped.. wiped out absolutely.**

Int. Yes.

BP. I just stayed in.

According to her husband, BP. had had a son who died some years ago:

BP. Er..yes.. I had the baby. I still went back to work, and my mother looked after the baby.

Int. What happened to the baby?

BP. Er.. He a boy... er, Richard!...Richard....My Richard!

Int. Your Richard...

BP. Yes.....Richard.

BP. Er, he married. He's still around.

Int. Is he?

BP. Yes.He married. Er. Had two grandchildren.

Int. Two grandchildren?

BP. Yes and er, I know it's a sad story. I er I don't why he died. I don't know. I never really been able to work it out....What....What caused his death, I don't know.

During the case-study, BP. frequently made reference to her failing memory:

Int. Do you worry about remembering sometimes? (*BP. responded immediately to this question).*

BP. Yes I I had...Oh it's dreadful. I forget things! That is one of my downfalls! All my life I ..my...forget!

Int. And it's got worse has it?

BP. Yes!

Int. It's a shame isn't it?....

BP. Oh, Oh. From very young I was forgetful!.....One of my downfalls...Being so forgetful....

BP. You know I'm.....my brain's so muddled now about Richard. Of what did he die of?.....

Int. It's hard not being able to remember things isn't it?

BP. Oh yes! It's awful when you get to certain age! Seem to forget things.

The significance of these topics for this informant appears to be supported by the evidence. Further, this informant had a fund of stories concerning her work at the rectory. She remembered a great deal about the car she drove for the rector and his wife:

BP. Yes It was...and then they brought.. Do you know if you remember the Trojan cars, the great make cars they first came out. They brought a new... new Trojan car, and I used to drive it.

Int. Did you like driving?

BP. Yes but it's er... it's tricky on the steering, because it's got solid tyres.

Int. Really?

BP. Yes not pneumatic tyres.. They're sol.. solid tyres, with notches in and it's a bit heavy on steering. Yes, but I used to get away with it . *(BP. chuckled).*

Although some of her memories of past experiences appeared to be

relatively intact, the repetitive nature of her stories concerning the rectory, her childhood and the Trojan car, suggests that these memories were well rehearsed and well established. They were, after all, very old memories. However, as with other informants, BP. was still able to surprise the interviewer late into the investigation by recalling a new story, the story of her little village shop. This took place in October 1992.

As with other informants, the progression of her illness and inability of her spouse to cope with her behaviours, meant that BP. entered into long term residential care. Of interest, is the final interview with this informant in August 1993, in which it is obvious that only faint traces of her former stories remained in memory:

Int. **What about when you were at the rectory? Do remember that?**

BP. **Oh yes.....That's wrong. It .....long time.....**

Int. **Mm! You worked there a long time.....**

BP. **Mm.....Yes I did.....**

Int. **Do you remember the name of the vicar?**

BP. **Yes!**

Int. **What was his name?**

BP. ***(Paused)*....Dear.... Don't remember.....**

Int. **You drove their car didn't you?**

BP. **Er.....William.....**

Int. **William?**

BP. **William Rom.....Ney....**

During the discussion of this case-study, it is suggested that this

informant had emotional memories of the past which were still available for recall during the process of the interviews. There is a posited link between emotion and states of cognitive awareness. In addition, although her stories were fragmented, it was still possible to see them as part of a whole.

Further, it is suggested that the life story or narrative of BP. is of interest, because it gives some indication of the developing relationship between memory and dementia during the later stages of this illness. It was possible to trace the progress of some of these memories throughout the life of the investigation. Many of these memories appeared to gradually fade, to lose content, until only a faint outline remained. However, even at the very end of the investigation, knowledge of BP.'s past stories gave the interviewer some assistance, and marginal success, in prompting some recall.

There is some evidence that the process and management of dementia, might inhibit the preservation of a sense of narrative identity. Although staff in BP.'s nursing home reported that she occasionally mentioned the rectory, they were unaware of her story and, thus, were unable to supply prompts and cues which may have aided some recall. The interviewer further suggests that, by the time of the final interview, BP. had appeared to have lost the ability to recall her stories and had lost this sense of narrative identity.

The process of the interviews and the relationship with the interviewer also gave BP. enjoyment:

BP. You know, it's lovely getting to know you.

Int. Is it?

BP. Yes!

BP. Now I've seen a smiling face.....

Int. You look happier. That's good isn't it?

BP. Yes...Yes.....Yes I've picked up your smile ...

A further evaluation of this case-study suggests that the interviewer did ask BP. leading questions, but the identified themes and interpretations remained fairly constant over time. Moreover, this informant, too, is presented in a very positive light. However, it is difficult to envisage how this might be otherwise, given that BP. disliked being miserable, and enjoyed the social aspects of her meetings with the interviewer.

5.8 MR. ROBERT BIDDLEY

At sixty six years of age, this informant was the second youngest participant in the investigation and his illness, as his case-study indicates, progressed more rapidly than with other informants. There were thirteen recorded and transcribed interviews with RB. which took place between May 1992 and August 1993. He, too, greatly enjoyed the social aspects of the interviews. He frequently said that he liked talking to others;

RB. Oh, I've always em, have a chat with anybody, you know.

Int. I've seen that! You like chatting don't you?

RB. Yes. If you don't do that, then what's life?

RB. I like the fun of talking to people that, you know, not trying, they're not trying to be big! or anything like that.That's what I like, because they have a good laugh, and you have a good laugh, and that's the best thing isn't it?!

As with Mr. Silverthorne, RB. found it difficult to show his emotions. The interviews indicated that he tried to accept his changing circumstances and loss of mental abilities, but this was very painful for him:

RB. I used to be really sharp and do any job, you know. But er it's no good to apologise! Er...*(There were tears in his eyes).*

RB. People, lot of people... Just because it's er, you're being not being quite one hundred per cent, you know, it makes it's.... it easier. There's a lot of people in the same.....illness. The same predicament coming....

The interviewer suggests that this sadness over his failing cognitive abilities was a significant theme in his conversation. Further, there were indications of a strong desire to move towards a state of acceptance: He continually spoke of the importance of accepting life and others:

RB. Yes! I'm..I always try to have things easier really! There's no sense, you know, trying to make it ten times difficult..You don't want that do you?

The importance of laughter appeared to hold great significance for him. He felt that laughing at yourself, and with others was important:

RB. Oh yes! But you've got to be able to laugh at yourself as well. Otherwise all .....

RB. I think that if you can have a good laugh, that's a lot of goodness.

His memories of his childhood and his mother were important. His experiences from this time, suggested that he felt he had to make his own way in the world. He had to work hard and be careful with money. His work was, therefore, of significant importance to him. This theme was to be developed as the interviews progressed.

RB. I didn't want to get married. I'm one of seven children and that makes a big difference as well, doesn't it?

RB. What being.....um one of seven children... We're not going get a lot given you. So you've got to get what you can! And that's it!

RB. We looked after my mother, you know. They all did, all the children. We did what we could. We didn't have a lot, but we did the best we could! Mm.....

RB. I did anything. Clerical.

Int. Clerical.... Who did you work for?

RB. British Rail!

Int. British Rail? Did you work for them for a long time?

RB. Quite a bit! Yes yes..

RB. Wants money.

Int. ....Money?

RB. Yes. Money is the only thing that can help.

RB. Yes..Yes. But apar..apart from that, I don't think you can do anything..... without money!

The interviewer suggests that a possible interpretation of these remarks concerning money, indicated that RB felt that not enough was being spent on medical care for people in the setting. However, they might also indicate the importance he attached to the possession of money. Certainly, other conversations from his case-study suggests that he was careful with his finances.

He did not appear to have any major regrets about his past life. His conversation suggested that he felt he had done his best. He had enjoyed his life:

RB. Everything that I've done, I've done purposely and that's it! So I've no sense in... *(He gave a little laugh)*...I shouldn't have done that, or I shouldn't have done this.. You just do the best things you can, don't you?

RB. I've.. I've enjoyed it! I've made mis mistakes, we all do. There's no one can tell me they've made no mistakes and

things like that, but I know, I think I'm I'm just as good good as most.....

Interviewer interpretations of his conversations suggests that RB. was a kind and thoughtful man, with many acquaintances and few close friends. Evidence from a boyhood friend supports this viewpoint. RB. appeared to be a relatively private person who kept much of himself hidden. However, there were some indications of his inner self during a discussion on death.

Int. **Does it frighten you, the thought of dying?**

RB. **No! Because it's.. it's got to happen! You you can't er avoid can you, really? If we could, we'd put a bit more in the kitty!** ***(Combined laugher).***

RB. **I'm not very keen on talking about it but it seems.....Well you..you shouldn't.....Some people take it as a a matter of fact, don't they? It is!..Well nobody's going to stay here for ever and ever and ever, are they?**

RB. **Yes...Yes.....It's sad but er inevitable, isn't it? You going to deathly go going yourself...Yes.....**

Although the interviewer endeavoured to change the topic by asking RB. where he lived, he returned again to the subject of death:

RB. **Mm.....Oh yes but.....doesn't matter where you're living it's ...you're going die** ***(RB. gave a little laugh)*****.....You can't stop that can you? No.....**

It is possible that this topic could have been more fully discussed and might have led to further disclosures by RB. However, the course of the interview indicates that the interviewer chose not to pursue it further. This was probably due to a reluctance to upset the informant. Equally, the interviewer may have sensed RB.'s concerns and felt unable to cope, at that time, with the possible strong emotions they may have generated. However, this is merely another conceivable interpretation of events.

As the investigation progressed, together with his illness, RB.'s stories began to fade. Of some significance is the final interview that took place in August 1993, in the nursing home where he now lived. As with other informants, his memories had seeped away leaving a faint outline of the original contents:

Int. **Do you remember when you worked for British Rail?**

RB. **Yes.**

Int. **You do? Was that a good job? *(Pause)* Was that a good job working for British Rail?.....*(RB. did not reply).* Do you remember looking after your mum?**

RB. **Mmm!**

Int. **Was her name Violet?....Was her name Violet? *(RB nodded)*.....You looked after your mum for a long time.....*(RB. made no reply, and continued to pace the corridors).* But you remember working for British Rail?**

RB. **Yes.**

Int. **A good job.....*(RB. did not answer. He continued to pace the corridors without pause).***

RB. was no longer able to sit for any length of time. Staff in the setting reported that he would only sit down if there was food was on the table. The interviewer noted that he appeared to be totally exhausted.

Interviewer evaluation of this case-study suggests that that for RB., his sense of narrative identity is rapidly dissolving. However, he had enjoyed the process of the interviews, and, for a long period into the investigation, experienced increased levels of well-being and personhood:

RB. You and I talking our bits.. Quite decent isn't it?

RB. So you've had a damn good laugh.....And I did as well!.

RB. .....It is! Well tis tis, I I can have a chat with people, I mean it's easier isn't it!
Int. I think it makes you feel happy, would you say that?
RB. Oh yes! Oh yes!

A review of this case-study, indicates that this informant is held in deep regard by the interviewer. However, the interpretated meanings are based on the informant's actual conversations, and, as this particular informant was able to express himself quite clearly during most of the investigation, it is not possible to offer alternative explanations. Although the interviewer did ask leading, albeit exploratory, questions of this informant, the identified themes were frequently introduced by RB. himself, and remained constant over a long period of time.

Further, the emotional memories possessed by this informant indicate a link between emotions and states of cognitive awareness. Finally, the disappearance of his narrative is clearly shown in the final stages of the investigation together with a loss of a sense of narrative identity in the closing interview.

5.9 MR. ANDREW COXLEY

AC. was, probably, the least cognitively impaired of all the informants, although his skills as a raconteur were not so developed as those of Mr. Clerkenwell. A small CVA had left him with only minor memory deficits. This informant was interviewed between June 1992 and January 1994. with a total number of fifteen recorded and transcribed interviews.

The interviewer suggests several significant themes in the narrative of AC. There were indications that his work on the farm was an important part of his life. He enjoyed certain aspects of this work, such as driving his beloved tractor:

AC. Yes. All the years I gone on the farm. Tractor man, and old tractors. Good old tractor wasn't he? Never let me down. I used to drive it every day.....

AC. Yeah. Open air wan it, yes. I used to love it.

He would get his orders for the whole day from his employer when he arrived for work. The interviewer suggested that it is possible that this ordered routine appealed to AC.

AC. Oh yes! I got on there alright! Well...its long days, that the trouble.....But I didn't take no notice, you know. Used to know what we had to do. Used to get our orders in the morning...And they'd last all day.....

Further, the interviewer suggests that there may be some significance in the fact that driving his tractor was a solitary pursuit. Given his current situation, this time of certainty and order would be especially meaningful in the present. However, AC. had had problems with ulcerative colitis for many years, and he had to open his bowels many times during the day. An alternative explanation is that this solitary work allowed him privacy should the need have arisen. AC. gives some indication of this during the case-study:

AC. I didn't...wasn't too bad when I first had, because I was on the farm, you see. I was out in the field I could go anywhere.

Int. Yes.

AC. Used to be ploughing, when I used to plough up the furrow and then go in that and bury, you know. I always liked to bury it! But twas there all the time sort of thing.....Said, "I think I'll operate", he said.....I said, "Well the sooner the better.".....

Thus, although it is possible that the uncertainty of the present may have idealised the orderly calm of his farm work, one might argue that his very real physical problems were supported by his working life. He had work which gave him physical freedom, in that he was given his daily orders and frequently worked alone. This allowed him

to manage his illness. A further significant theme in his case-study was the disclosure of his mother's illness:

AC. My mother was in here [the setting] for about eight years...

Int. Was she?

AC. Died in here actually.....Over there in the.....(*AC. gestured towards another part of the hospital).*

As the interviews progressed, AC. began to speak of his troubled childhood, due to his mother's ill health:

AC. She had milk fever apparently. Went to her head....Never got her right anymore, you know....We tried hard with her. She used to get over it and then get attacked again and it was a bit of a struggle you know.

Int. So you couldn't have had a happy childhood then, really?

AC. Not really, no as far as mother was concerned.. Yes.

There were indications that AC. had never fully resolved his sense of grief and guilt concerning his mother:

Int. Mmm.....So all the memories of your mother, are they mostly sad memories really?

AC. Yes. They are really.

Int. Mmm.....

AC. Wasn't really old enough to understand, you know.....

He tried very hard to believe that he had done his best for her:

AC. Well that's what I've often thought that but.....I done what I could, and well I got to the stage where you couldn't do anything else for her.....*(Tears filled AC.'s eyes).*

Towards the end of the investigation, he spoke of his feelings at being in the same setting as his mother:

AC. Yes....She was then over there. (*AC. looked out of the window towards the building where he used to visit his mother on Sunday afternoons).* That place haunts me, over there.

AC. Well,. it do when I come that....no which...where was she as it happens? Oh, it's that bit over there.(*AC. pointed out of window to a building).* I hate coming.....round that bit.

The interviewer argues that, although his narrative of this part of his life consists of a brief outline, it is possible that his mother's illness is a story of disorder. 'Disorder' was not only descriptive of her condition, but was also descriptive of her effect on much of his existence. It might be suggested, therefore, that AC. had experienced strong elements of order versus disorder in his life.
It is difficult to disagree with this interpretation. The elements of AC.'s story certainly suggest a traumatic childhood, with much uncertainty for the whole family:

Int. So you never knew...you used to come home from school and you wouldn't know what she was going like?

AC. No, no.....Didn't...Never had no tea ready or anything, you know...

AC. implied that his mother had tried to end her life:

AC. Yes, fairly often...No she couldn't help it see.....I used to get home from work at night and had to find her always... Dad was still at work....He used to work til five look and I used to come at five, near enough before five.....and she wasn't there, she was gone!

Int. Mm Mmm.....

AC. And you didn't know what to do! ***(AC. gave a brief chuckle).*** **Had to go and look for her didn't you? And I knew..she.....down where we used to live, just down the road a little way, there was a river.....It's shallow but good enough to do the damage.....I only had to walk down there and look in, and there she was, you know.**

This uncertainty evidently continued into AC's adulthood, and his own role as a father and provider. The evidence, therefore, would appear to support the interpretations offered by the interviewer. However, it is also possible that the process of the investigation may well have allowed AC. to use this opportunity to explore his unresolved conflicts, in a relatively safe manner. It might be suggested that the story of his mother was always ready to be told. Certainly, AC. was able to discuss his unresolved feelings of sadness and grief during the course of the interviews:

AC. Well that's what I've often thought that but.....I done

what I could and well I got to the stage where you couldn't do anything else for her.....(*Tears filled his eyes and had done so several times throughout this interview).*

Int. No.....Sometimes you just can't win whatever you do.....

AC. No! I used to come in here and I don't know what she's going to be like today, and then she'd have one of her moods on, you know, and I couldn't get nowhere with her.....

Further, AC. was able to disclose his feelings concerning his mother's death:

AC. She died in there, You see.....I went in there one afternoon and she was gone.....

AC. I sort of come out, went to get me bike.....I..I didn't sort of realise it that she were gone, but I sort of thought, well that's er a lovely release.

This story of his mother's illness and eventual death is full of strong emotions, however, there were other aspects of AC.'s life that were meaningful to him. He often reminisced about aspects of his life on the farm. He was aware that these days were never to return:

Int. Those were the days weren't they?

AC. Oh yes! All gone now though!.....

Int. Everything changes though, Andy, doesn't it?

AC. Yes!.....Go over the years don't it?.....

However, speaking of them gave him pleasure:

Int. So, were good days were they?

AC. Yes. Won't come back no more will they? I don't think.

Int. I think when you think about them, they come back don't they?

AC. Well, they seem to. Yes.

Int. Does it give you pleasure to think about them?

AC. Yes.

Overall, he enjoyed the process of the interviews and appeared to have experienced increased well-being. He spoke of his interests, his family and of his concerns. His own health was a problem and he frequently discussed this with the interviewer. AC. indicated that it had been helpful talking to the interviewer:

AC. Oh yes! Makes a difference for the say, don't it?

At the conclusion of the interviews, and although more frail, AC. was still able to recount his stories. However, it is argued that his mild loss of memory, and often understated responses, created difficulty in defining a clear path through his narrative. Often, in cases of severe memory loss, the repetitive story indicates an area of significance. With other less cognitively impaired elderly people, this is not so readily perceived.

Certain themes in the narrative of AC. were identified over time,

through the course of the interviews. These memories were emotionally significant and moving. The interviewer suggests that AC. was searching for wisdom, as defined by Erikson (1963), during their meetings. His testimony would appear to support this argument. Much of AC.'s life appeared to have been spent searching for interpretation, personal understanding and acceptance.

However, the link between emotion and cognition is not quite so clear cut with this informant, due to his relatively mild impairment of recall and understated manner of speaking. Nonetheless, his emotional memories were strongly present, especially those concerning his mother. Further, his ability to tell his stories, in some detail, minimised the possibility of misinterpretation.

5.10 MR. MELVIN RIDER

MR. was sixty five years of age at the beginning of this investigation. He was three months younger than Mr. Biddley and, as such, was the youngest informant in the group. However, unlike RB., this informant was living in the community with his wife and continued to do so for a further eleven months after RB. had entered into long term care.

The interviews with MR. began in June 1992 and continued until January 1994. There were sixteen recorded and transcribed interviews with this informant. The difficulties inherent in talking to MR. were apparent from the first. His impairment of speech led to the interviewer experiencing great difficulty in comprehending his meanings. Many of MR.'s words were transcribed phonetically.

Further, the interviewer admits that many of his words and conversations had to be replayed several times before any understanding was achieved. There exists, therefore, a greater possibility of misinterpretation of meaning.

The interviewer identifies several themes present over throughout the course of the case-study. It is suggested that MR. liked to keep busy. and always wanted to do his best:

MR. Well it's n n n not. I do want want a sat sat something to do!

MR. Mm! Wha what d do I do n n now? I I I nothing else, there's n not.....
Int. Do you get bored?
MR. Yes!
Int. Very bored...?
MR. It's awful bor er er er!

MR. I wanted t t t die ve to b be de um good!
Int. So you wanted everything you do to be really good?
MR. Oh, as much as much as I can!

The evidence given by MR.'s wife, indicates some support for this interpretation. MR.'s mother was also something of a perfectionist. Mrs. Rider junior said that his mother encouraged him to achieve. MR. had gone to a famous Oxbridge college where he obtained a degree in physics. The interviewer commented on his academic achievements. However, MR. knew that he was not as he once was:

Int. **You've obviously got a very good brain.**

MR. ***(Paused).*** **It's em, it's not g goo good ge good goby gone now!**

As the interviews progressed, further deterioration developed in his cognitive abilities. The interviewer makes no attempt to offer a deep interpretation of MR.'s words, but seeks to show their developing relationship, together with a partial account of MR.'s narrative. Where other than simple interpretation is offered, it is stated that it is highly speculative. The possible strength of this case-study, however, lies in MR.'s view of the present, and the anguish that this caused him. During the in-depth interview with this informant, which took place on the secure ward of the setting, MR. made his feelings concerning his 'imprisonment' very clear. His speech was also more distinct:

Int. **And you feel angry?**

MR. **I do! Very ! Very!**

Int. **Very angry...yes.....Do you feel people are making you do things?**

MR. **What!**

Int. **Do you feel people are telling you what to do?**

MR. **N No!**

Int. **No.....**

MR. **N N N N I can't can't can't do d told. I I I not not not said! I've never seen la seen er ...and anything else! And that's what's on on on my my my bad head!** ***(MR. sounded frustrated and angry).***

Int. **That's what on your mind?...All the time?**

MR. Yes! Yes! ***(Said quietly and calmly).***

Int. And you're very upset.....

MR. I I am! ***(Again said clearly).***

He felt angry and grief stricken that he had no control over his life and present situation:

MR. No! No so so so rotten! er er rotten.

Int. You're sad and unhappy..

MR. I'm ad de de yes!

Int. You're sad and unhappy.

MR. I'm very happy happy!

Int. Very unhappy?

MR. Very! ***(MR. began to cry. Speech became incoherent).***

He appeared to be very conscious of his diminishing personhood and well-being:

MR. Very very very un.....*(He cried again)*.....Is er is isi si choughed from me! I can't can it's either had <u>always always</u> all all wa wa wa there.

MR. ...It's Rider doing this!

Following this traumatic interview, MR. returned home and there was a long period of relatively tranquillity. There were no further periods in the secure ward. He seemed less anxious and was able to see his life in a more positive manner.

MR. .....And it was good good good!

MR. Oh it's good good days!

Int. Good days?...Good days

MR. Yes, yes yes yes.....

He seemed to have no major regrets that he could recall, concerning his life. His deep love for his wife remained very much part of him:

Int. You've had a good life? ....

MR. Mmm....

Int. Do you have any regrets?

MR. *(Paused).* No! Does it gain, no.....Good!

Int. And you've been married a long time....It's good!

MR. Mm! And we d don't go far. We w de go....like e e each other.

During the conclusion to this case-study, the interviewer suggests that MR. told his story in the form of accomplishments. The case-study would appear to largely support this observation. Further, it was possible to trace the disappearing content of his self stories. They showed a positive decline over time. Again, the interviewer comments on the need for simple interpretation of MR.'s narrative, given the possibility that exists for error. The interviewer suggests that the strongest interview, which took place on the secure ward, offers support for Sinason's (1992) argument that anger unlocks memory.

A review of the arguments contained in this case-study suggests that the interpretations, simple and generalised though they are, are correct. It is not possible to offer deeper interpretations of this

narrative. Considerations of the contents of this case-study, once again, show that MR. was seen in a very favourable light. However, the interviewer admits that this informant had a great effect on her. MR. is portrayed as a very lovable person. Possibly, the deep regard and sympathy for this very vulnerable informant may have slanted the writing of this case-study. Moreover, although the reported conversations and experiences with him are truthfully and accurately detailed, the feelings engendered in the interviewer by this informant spill over into the case-study. The interviewer gives many examples of his kindness to her and to others, in some detail. However, the conclusions drawn by the interviewer are stated objectively, albeit with great compassion.

5.11 MR. HUGH RAFT

HR. was perceived by the interviewer as a very unhappy man who might benefit from the psychotherapeutic aspects of the investigation. The interviews with HR. began in August 1992 and continued until January 1994, with a total of thirteen recorded and transcribed interviews. HR. had mild cognitive deficits and, for most of the interviews, was able to remember his past with some clarity. This case-study is interesting in that it appeared as if the informant himself had made inaccurate interpretations of his own life experiences. For this reason, the interviewer sought to offer a more psychodynamic approach and interpretation of his meanings.

RH. had recently remarried for the second time. His relationship with his new wife was poor. At the commencement of the investigation he frequently cried, and did so throughout many of the interviews. Life

for him was not happy:

HR. .....But er...it is a good I think you if you can get dead somehow!

HR. I am sad! *(Tears filled his eyes).* I've been sad a long time darling.

During the first interview, he spoke of his present wife:

Int. Are you happy in your second marriage or not really?
HR. Well..S S Yes I think I am. She gets a bit funny now and again, but you got to put up with that at the moment haven't you?
Int. But you're not as happy as with your first wife?
HR. Definitely not! No...She was a lovely kid..Really beautiful...

The story of his second marriage continued throughout the investigation and formed a significant theme. As the interviews progressed, it became obvious that his wife was giving him very mixed messages. She would tell him that she would never let him go, but at the same time would tell involved agencies that she could no longer cope with him. This uncertainty caused HR. some distress. Another significant theme was the story of his abused childhood. HR. and his sister were illegitimate. They had different fathers. His mother had subsequently married, and there were several children from this relationship. HR. began to speak of these times during the first interview:

HR. Cause it was a very hard life when I was a kid anyway.

Int. You did?

HR. Oh yes! Hit about terrible!

Int. Did you?

HR. Yes. Drunken father..step father.....terrible man!

Int. So you....That would have frightened you to death when you were a boy.....

HR. No it didn't frighten me death, no. I just scared of keep getting good hidings *(HR. laughed nervously)*. I sorry I got to tell you this sort of way, bu...but it's all true!

He also spoke of his time in the Army where he was a sergeant major. This again was very important to him and continued to be mentioned in many interviews. :

HR. ..... I loved the Army.

Int. Had a good life really.....

HR. Well! Up to the army.....It was good in the Army, honestly it was, very good indeed! Well I had had eight hundred and eighty men in my company!

The interviewer suggests that period of his life was made more significant by his present uncertainties. It is argued that HR. continued to remind himself, and others, of a time when he had authority, respect, and his basic needs of security were met. His story of his ill-treatment at the hands of his stepfather, continued develop in further interviews:

HR. Yes...He's [stepfather] dead now he is, Thank God! *(HR.*

gave a short, harsh laugh). **You see the great problem is he's....I'll get something for his...for the shops or something and I always made my mind up that I was going get it! But sometimes you wouldn't get it..... When I used to go home.....use some bloody good hidings! It was terrible, honestly!**

Int. **Was he a big chap?**

HR. **No! He weren't much bigger 'n me!...much bigger 'n me.....But he was always scrumpying [drinking cider]..... "Where's the little bastard to?" he used to say! Oh.....I shall never forget that as long as I live.....** ***(Bastard was said with great venom).***

Int. **It must have been terrifying for you.....**

HR. **Yet the other kids, you see, there was about nine ...eight or nine of us and he never touched them cause they weren't his kids...Well they were his kids! But ....not...not like I was.....**

HR. **.....Til it wasn't wasn't for five minutes. It was sometimes an hour he was hitting me about.**

The interviewer offers several interpretations of the themes from this case-study, both from a psychoanalytic, and other, less interpretative, viewpoints. It is suggested that most psychoanalytic theories from Adler to Winnicott, including Klein and Freud, to name but a few, were applicable to this informant. The significance of his abused childhood might explain much of his present personality. From a fairly young age, HR. had been unloved and devalued. His unresolved memories of this time were with him still. He could tell

his story, but was unable to face the true reality of this abuse, it was too frightening for him to face the depths of his vulnerability.

Using psychoanalytic theory, the interviewer suggests that he coped with this trauma by 'splitting' which is a defence mechanism that enables the self to disown 'the bad self' and to project it on to others. HR. retained the 'good self'. He continually praised himself for his achievements in order to feel better about himself and to deny that he was unworthy. He saw himself as a very good and kind person:

HR. My great problem is I'm too gentle.

HR. .....I personally feel that I'm.....I'm a bit too good.

HR. ...I'm n in the habit of getting in trouble with any..not even the police or nothing. Touch wood I've never been in trouble. Though I thought I would have been done by now. But no, I've never stole nothing.. I was...To be truthful, I was a little angel! I shouldn't say that really but I was! To myself!

He felt his kindness to others was not reciprocated:

HR. I'm silly like that.....I I help anybody, but the little buggers don't seem to want to help me! *(HR. laughed nervously).*

These explanations do follow the psychoanalytic school of thought. However, HR. may well have wished merely to stress the fact that he did not deserve to be treated like this. It is possible that both

explanation may hold some validity, but will depend on the reader's own beliefs and background. Moreover, his view of his personal qualities seemed at variance with his role as a sergeant major. Further, HR. had an unrealistic grasp of current concerns. During a period of great unrest with his second wife, he did not seem to appreciate the gravity of the situation:

HR. Wasn't much of a tiff. Just..just to say she didn't want me [to remain living with her] and that sort of thing.

Further, and more simple, interviewer interpretations suggest that HR. had some clearly defined themes which gave structure to his narrative. His grief over the loss of his first wife was evident and it has been suggested that this may have re-emerged, due to the uncertainty of the present, and the difficulties with his second relationship. His childhood memories occupied much of the interviews and he returned to them time and time again. His service career was a significant part of his life. He associated this time with very positive emotions. He continually reiterated his pride in his past role as a sergeant major.

The evidence offered through the case-study appears to support these simple interpretations. Nevertheless, the approach used throughout these particular series of interviews suggests that it was beneficial for this informant. As the interviews progressed he gradually became happier. He possessed sufficient insight to acknowledge that the investigation had been partly responsible for this:

HR. Any rate, thanks to you ...Thanks to everybody else, I'm

here. Especially thanks to you.....

Int. Well, I don't think I've done a lot.

HR. Yes you have! You you coming along cheers me up don't it?

Nevertheless, he still saw his childhood as unhappy. When the interviewer asked him if he had a good life, he replied:

HR. Noo! Not not family wise, no.

However, he appeared able to see his childhood experiences more objectively. He appeared to become less of a victim:

Int. What did he [his stepfather] look like?

HR. Er....He tall. He had his hair brushed back pretty thick and he walked on his on his toes quite a lot. As he walked along he he used to go up and down like this ***(HR. moved his hand up and down in a bouncy motion)*** **He..he had a beery complexion.**

HR. .....He was a right sod, he was. The only one good thing I had about it is my stepfather and his name was Wyatt. And police come and say, "Hugh that's not your dad there is it?" I said, "No, that's my stepfather."

Towards the end of the investigation, he saw himself as a different person. His relationship with his wife had been relatively tranquil, after a very upsetting period, and he felt happier:

HR. .....You done a lot for me, haven't you?!

Int. Why?

HR. What a different man I became! Be truthful!

Int. How do you feel about life at the moment? Is it quite good?

HR. It's been very very good.

Int. So you've been happy? You're feeling happier?

HR. Yes. Yes.

Int. But life's better for you now?

HR. It's a hundred per cent better, yes....

His memories of his first wife appeared to be less grief stricken. He told the interviewer, quite calmly, of a visit to the cemetery to lay some flowers on his first wife's grave. He did not cry. Indeed his tears had lessened as the investigation progressed. In November 1993, HR.'s wife finally decided she could no longer cope and HR. entered residential care, after an initial period in the assessment ward of the setting. His memory was more obviously impaired, and he had forgotten much that had previously caused him great distress. He no longer remembered being married to his second wife. He thought that he worked in the setting and felt useful.

Although the more obvious psychotherapeutic approach adopted by the interviewer for this particular informant, has allowed the informant to be presented in a more objective manner. it might still be suggested that HR. is presented in a very favourable light, given some of the comments made by his wife. However, the interviewer has endeavoured to present RH. in a factual manner, and to offer clear explanations of complex interpretations. The interviewer argues that

HR. displayed strong emotions associated with significant life events, in that his memories of these times were intact and readily available for recall, in spite of the influence of the dementing process.

It is also suggested that addressing the emotional content of his memories allowed him to expand upon their meaning and significance. A review of this case-study appears to support this argument. It is indicated that this informant did have very significant emotional memories, again, indicating the relationship between cognition and emotion. However, the interviewer goes on to suggest that HR. rewrote his narrative, in that he began to see himself in a more realistic, yet positive, light. The fact that HR. appeared to move from a state of bewilderment and uncertainty, towards the possession of a certain peace and acceptance, offers some support for this argument. This change remained with him in spite of the major changes in his life. The interviewer further suggests that this may be attributable to the acceptance and interpretation of his narrative by others.

Although it is obvious that HR. did rewrite his narrative, as is shown by his more positive comments concerning his past and present experiences, the major difficulties of analysing outcomes of this nature are that they can be interpreted very differently. HR. may have gone further into denial and shut off his more painful memories of the present and the past. Alternatively, HR. may well have experienced a changed view of himself due to the psychotherapeutic nature of this intervention. Equally, the process of dementia may have diminished his memories and/or his concerns.

It is probable that the outcomes were due to all of the above, and not solely dependent on any one process. This case-study suggests that various psychoanalytic theories offer understanding at a deeper level. However, it is impossible to rule out alternative explanations. As with all informants, HR. has a progressive illness which inhibits recall, insight and understanding. Complex interpretations, therefore, must always remain speculative. Nevertheless, it is possible to propose that the psychotherapeutic benefits of this investigation led to an increase in well-being and personhood for this informant. HR. did, indeed, move from a state of ill-being at the beginning of the investigation, to a state of increased well-being by the conclusion of the study.

5.12 DISCUSSION

The meta analysis of these case-studies, supports the argument that all informants possessed emotional memories, albeit to varying degrees. This suggests and supports the concept of a linked and intertwined relationship between cognition and emotion. In addition, the discussion of the narrative is of some significance. It is evident from these case-studies that all informants told their stories, and these stories gradually dissolved as the effects of the dementing process increased. This was clearly indicated in the case-studies of Mr. Silverthorne, Mrs. Pinks, Mr. Biddley, and Mr. Rider. The case-studies of Mrs. Woodley and Mr. Raft, also indicated the beginnings of this process of narrative loss. This dissolution of a sense of narrative identity within dementia is of some consequence. Those interventions which seek to maintain the narrative within dementia are therefore of great importance. Maintenance of story was linked to

maintenance of personhood and well-being in the informants.

Mrs. Woodley's sense of a more complete narrative identity enabled her to experience greater happiness than before. Her mother no longer had such a negative influence on her. The final interview with this informant, and evidence from staff in the setting, supports this argument. Mr. Silverthorne, too, experienced greater levels of well-being for a time. His levels of self esteem were supported by the interviewer. He enjoyed recalling meetings with his former staff and the welcome they gave him.

Mr. Clerkenwell gained pleasure in recalling some of his past and telling his stories. Although his memories of the war were brutal, they did not overshadow more happier times. Further, he enjoyed his relationship with the interviewer. Mrs. Pinks experienced greater well-being for a time. Her case-study gives clear evidence that she appreciated the social aspects of this investigation and the opportunity to tell her stories. This was also true of Mr. Biddley. He loved to laugh and to tell the interviewer that this made life worthwhile. Mr. Coxley found the investigation to be therapeutic. He was able to explore his painful memories of his mother but also to recall happier times spent working on the farm. Mr. Rider, although severely affected by this illness, appeared to have gained pleasure from most of the interviews. He liked the interviewer and was affectionate towards her. He, too, recalled more cheerful times and this appeared to give him happiness. The final informant, Mr. Raft, clearly experienced therapeutic benefits from the investigation. He was a much happier person at the conclusion of the investigation than before.

There are, therefore, both theoretical and therapeutic implications attached to these findings. All of the case-studies indicate that informants experienced increased levels of well-being through the process of the investigation. Various arguments are offered to support findings for each individual. However, it would appear that the concept of individual interviews to recall the past, with the aid of interviewer counselling skills are of benefit to some older people with dementia. These therapeutic and theoretical implications require further examination and discussion, and will, therefore, be scrutinised in greater depth during the next two chapters of this work.

During the introduction to this chapter, an initial examination of the case-studies as a whole suggested two possible areas of concern. One such area was that of the possibility of bias in the interviewer's interpretation of informant's responses. The meta analysis of the individual case-studies suggests that the interpretations offered by the interviewer were largely substantiated. Although alternative explanations could be offered to explain informant's meanings, they did not disprove, but rather qualified, the arguments of the interviewer.

The second area of concern surrounded the issue of the interviewer's depth of regard for all informants. The examination of individual case-studies suggests that this is made manifest in all case-studies. However, although all informants, were treated with great sympathy and understanding, the interviewer sought to minimise any bias through the use of the actual words of all informants. The informants told their own stories. The evident regard held by the

interviewer for all informants did not allow the interviewer to offer faulty interpretations during these case-studies. Thus, although positive bias was present, it did not cloud the case-studies. Is it possible to guard against such positive bias in an investigation of this nature? It is probably impossible to do so. The characteristics of this type of research suggest that it is the relationship between informant and interviewer which generate such rich data. It is possible that a longitudinal relationship of this nature can only be achieved when genuine liking is present. It would be extremely difficult to do this type of research if there was indifference, or actual dislike, of informants.

It is probable that this category of research is more often undertaken by those investigators who like older people with dementia. The interviewer, herself, is one such investigator. During the personal statement given in chapter three of this work, it is made clear that she likes and respects all older people, with or without dementia. It is, therefore, probable that positive bias will exist in research of this nature. Nevertheless, interviewers should be made aware of this personal characteristic and seek to moderate its effects, where possible, without the reduction of therapeutic benefits for those who take part in this type of inquiry.

CHAPTER SIX

DISCUSSION OF THE THERAPEUTIC IMPLICATIONS OF THE STUDY

6.1 INTRODUCTION

This chapter is concerned with the therapeutic effects of this investigation, both for individual informants and the group as a whole. Further considerations of the therapeutic implications of the findings should include a discussion of the role of counselling skills used extensively throughout all interviews with the informants. Finally, this chapter will close with a discussion of the ethical considerations of the use of such an approach, with vulnerable elderly people who have dementia.

6.2 THERAPEUTIC CONSIDERATIONS OF THIS STUDY

Indications that the therapeutic benefits from this study were generalised would suggest that these therapeutic outcomes might not be wholly influenced by informant's individual personalities, life chances and present states of health, but rather on the approach used during this investigation. Further, if the approach used during the investigation benefitted all informants without exception, then this may have additional implications in the management and care of other sufferers of dementia. All informants, without exception, showed signs of a marked increase in levels of well-being. For some, this increase in well-being continued after the conclusion of the interviews.

One explanation for this occurrence is that the meanings they had attributed to some of their life experiences had altered. This may have led to positive change in the perception of self, or, as Kitwood and Bredin (1992) would suggest, a return/recreation of personhood and well-being. This reworking or rewriting of the personal narrative, is supported by McAdams (1993) who argues that the life story is not fixed or final, but is always open to change.

These immediate therapeutic changes have been well documented in the literature, as is discussed in chapter one of this work. Extended individual therapeutic change however, has not received the same level of attention, although it is implicit in the work of many practioners including that of Feil (1982, 1985, 1992), Kitwood (1990a, 1990b, 1993), Kitwood and Bredin (1992), and Sinason (1992). All informants found the process of the investigation to be therapeutic, albeit to varying degrees and for differing lengths of time.

6.3 CONSIDERATIONS OF THE THERAPEUTIC IMPLICATIONS FOR INDIVIDUAL INFORMANTS

Mrs. Abigail Woodley

Mrs. Woodley was one of the informants who appeared to gain much from the psychotherapeutic nature of the investigation. Initially, this quiet and introspective lady found it difficult to disclose her thoughts and feelings, but eventually was able to speak of her 'burden' of worries:

Int. You've always seemed to worry about everything.....

AW. *(Gave little laugh)* **Oh yes, I carry it on my shoulder.**

AW. Oh I....Oh, yes. I managed to keep it [her worries] in there. ***(AW. pointed to her chest).***

The main focus of her narrative was her troubled relationship with her mother. She was able to say that she was relieved when her mother died. It was not easy for her to admit this:

Int. You must have felt quite relieved when she died really...
AW. Well I was! I mean, well it's an awful thing to have to say isn't it, about your own mother?

AW. That was awful wasn't it?!...Oh I felt awful!

AW. That I was..I was ashamed to think that, you know, I had to....sort of talk to people and.....
Int. About your mother?
AW. Mm.

The disclosure and acceptance of her feelings appeared to be therapeutic. Over time, it led to her displaying increasing signs of well-being. She said that it was important to disclose negative and painful feelings:

AW. Oh yes! You must get rid of these feelings mustn't you, that hurt you...

She admitted that it was something she had not done before:

AW. No! *(AW. laughed joyously).* I used to tuck them away! Written on a piece of paper!..

She began to laugh more frequently and found pleasure in life.

AW. No...I've....Well I can definitely say I do feel happy now! Really happy!

During the last recorded interview, she was able to think of her mother with less regret:

AW. I've got no...I've got no regrets as to where my mother is or.....has gone or, you know.....But....you know, for a week or two I was quite upset.

She said she felt more confident:

AW. Well, I I sh sh sort of felt..... sort of more confident!

She retained her feelings of well-being:

Int. Do you feel happier?
AW. Yes!.....Crumbs, a lot happier.....

The evidence suggests that Mrs. Woodley found the process of the interviews to be very therapeutic for her. Further, her reported feelings of happiness remained with her, even as her memory continued to decline. Mrs. Woodley could not recall our individual meetings. Indeed, I am not sure if she remembered any of them.

However, she continued to recognise me when I appeared in the setting, even after an absence of many weeks. Our last meeting was in May 1994 and she smiled with pleased surprise when she looked up and saw me walk into the dayroom. Staff in the setting commented on how happy she was to see me. It is probable, therefore, that Mrs. Woodley associates me with pleasant experiences.

Therapeutic outcomes generated by most forms of psychotherapy depend on memory. Painful episodes are recalled and explored with the therapist who endeavours to help the client achieve understanding and resolution. Mrs. Woodley, however, did not remember this process, but the beneficial outcomes of lessened anxieties and greater levels of happiness appeared to remain with her. It was as if a psychological healing had occurred and the essence of this event was retained somewhere in memory. There is little in the literature to explain this phenomenon, although there is some supporting evidence in the work of Feil (1985, 1992), Gardner (1993), Kitwood (1990a, 1990b), Kitwood and Bredin (1993), Hausman (1992), and Sinason (1992). There is, therefore, growing recognition of the importance of psychotherapeutic interventions for people with dementia. Coleman (1994) suggests that there exists the unrealised potential of life review counselling for older people.

Mr. Ronnie Silverthorne

Mr. Silverthorne was a very private person who appeared to have led rather a 'compartmentalised' life, prior to the commencement of his illness. During his working life, he had kept his work (public life),

and his home life (private life), distinctly separated. Evidence from his wife and colleague supported this viewpoint. He was quite surprised when I told him that I occasionally worked at home:

RS. Been at home working ? *(RS. sounded incredulous).*

During the investigation, he was found to be an unhappy and highly anxious man who found great difficulty in coping with the loss of autonomy due to his illness.

Int. Well you're used to being in charge aren't you? You're used to telling other people what to do.
RS. Oh yes! Well that's it's gone from glory hasn't it?

Throughout the investigation it was difficult to encourage Mr. Silverthorne to say how he felt. He appeared to be a reticent man:

RS. But now I think I'm going to stop, because I don't know how much I've said!

However, the approach used in the interviews allowed him to retain his managerial stance. He found it easy to tell me what to do:

RS. You Madam, sit there!

Although he was becoming more powerless, he was still able to able to assert his authority at times:

Int. Do you feel you're made to do things? Do you think people

make you do things?

RS. Like to! ***(We both laughed).***

However, it was apparent that he knew this authority was slowly waning:

Int. You'd rather be a home?

RS. Well you don't get it as easy as that!

He knew also that there where things he would never be able to do again:

RS. Well it's...I've left it off for a long time. I've said I'd like like to do it again, but I don't suppose I will! ***(RS. sounded sad).***

He did, however, appear to experience some enjoyment through speaking to the researcher:

RS. Anyway, it's pleasant seeing you for a spot!

Although disclosing his stories did not allow him the same degree of ease as Mrs. Woodley, he did find some pleasure in recalling the past. He spoke of his achievements in some detail, and it will be remembered that he repeatedly recalled his former staff greeting him when they saw him, after he had retired. This meant a great deal to him.

Further, the evidence from this informant suggests that he found

some therapeutic benefits from the investigation. He was able to retain a sense of autonomy and control over the interview process. His adaptive self, which was so important to him, was supported by the interviewer stance of deference and respect. His experiential and feeling self was largely hidden throughout our time together, but, again, this reserve was respected. Mr. Silverthorne appeared to enjoy our conversations. He was able to be himself, or, perhaps, which ever of these selves he wanted to be (Kitwood, 1988, 1990a, 1993).

Mr. Charles Clerkenwell

Mr. Clerkenwell, too, gained much enjoyment from the interview process. He was a shy person, but one who had a good social veneer which covered his feelings of inadequacy:

CC. I very often think that I've met a dull drool sort of existence.....

CC .....because I was a pretty shy person..
I have been shy in my time, yes. .....Believe me!

Again, the psychotherapeutic approach benefitted this informant. This approach sustained and supported him during his recall of a traumatic past:

CC. And all that sort of thing you you .....don't be dramatic, but you came at death's door several times.

The loss of his eyesight gave him much grief:

CC. This is the curse *(CC. pointed to his eyes).*

He recalled the specialist breaking the news to him that his eyesight was permanently damaged:

CC. "Oh no, never improve! Sorry to tell you this but it will never improve!" And you go on peering at the darkness, you see..... Sometimes you want to stand up and scream!

These brief snippets of information do not do justice to the rich recall displayed by Mr. Clerkenwell. He told his stories with verve and flamboyance, and the sharing of his narrative gave him much pleasure. The close relationship he formed with the researcher also seemed to be meaningful for him. He readily expressed his desire to continue to see me:

CC. And you're a very charming person, and I'd be delighted!

He loved to make me laugh:

CC. Oh....now...I've cracked a funny! This is lovely! Oh, I'm not going to let you go!

He was more ready to be happy than unhappy:

CC. Yes!.....What's the good of being miserable when it's so easy to be happier?

Although there is no question that Mr. Clerkenwell's past experiences

were frightening, the interviews allowed him to review his past life with some support. The process appeared to be therapeutic for him as he endeavoured to understand the reasoning and cruelty of his captors. He was also able to look back on his life as a whole and see that it was good:

Int. Do you think you have good life, Charlie?

CC. ***(Pause)*** **Yes! I can't complain at all!**

CC. ...Well.....I've had jolly good moments.....I've had calm and peaceful moments.....

The strength of his stories was evident. Mr. Clerkenwell demonstrated the meaningful relationship between life and story with great clarity. The sharing of his narrative enabled him to retain a sense of narrative identity, and to indicate to others the importance of this role.

Mrs. Bessie Pinks

Mrs. Pinks was a lady loved the interpersonal aspects of the investigation. She enjoyed laughing and talking with others and the recounting of her past achievements gave her great pleasure.

BP. Oh, I I like listening to the other people..... I always hope to find who...who chat along.

BP. Yes. That's right! And meeting such a lot of different people! I think I I..like that part. I think it's nice to meet a

lot of people.

She had travelled extensively in her younger days and had welcomed the opportunity to experience other cultures. Although this might suggest that Mrs. Pinks had an extrovert personality, she was, in fact, quite a shy person who was not given to readily disclosing her feelings, other than on a social and superficial level. She did however, speak of her feelings at leaving her home and going to work before she left school:

BP. Oh yes! I missed playing outside and.....
Int. You became grownup before wanted to!
BP. I..I did! Actually I did! Yes. Because I was always looked on as a little girl, but all of a sudden I was turned into a grown woman!

Mrs. Pinks enjoyed her growing relationship with the researcher as the investigation progressed:

BP. You know, it's lovely getting to know you.
Int. Is it?
BP. Yes!

BP. Now I've seen a smiling face.....
Int. You look happier. That's good isn't it?
BP. Yes...Yes.....Yes I've picked up your smile ...

Mrs. Pinks liked the pleasant things in life. She did not like being miserable or worried:

BP. Yes, Oh yes! I'm... I don't like being miserable.

BP. No...Just take things as they come.....

A review of the interviews with Mrs. Pinks suggests that this lady, too, can be considered to have experienced greater levels of well-being during most of this investigation. She benefitted from the psychotherapeutic approach used during the study.

Mr. Robert Biddley

The case-study concerned with Mr. Biddley, indicated that he still retained many social skills and he was well known in the locality. However, he appeared to have many acquaintances, but few close friends. As with other informants, he enjoyed the interpersonal aspects of the investigation. Talking to others gave him pleasure:

RB. Oh, I've always em, have a chat with anybody, you know.
Int. I've seen that! You like chatting don't you?
RB. Yes. If you don't do that, then what's life?

It is, perhaps, this facet of his personality that allowed him to take delight in some of the interviews. He very much enjoyed sharing a joke and laughter:

RB. I like the fun of talking to people that, you know, not trying, they're not trying to be big! or anything like that. That's what I like, because they have a good laugh, and you have a good laugh, and that's the best thing isn't it?!

Prior to the increase in the severity of his illness, laughter filled much of the interviews. Mr. Biddley, again, did not readily disclose his feelings, although he displayed grief at the loss of his cognitive abilities:

RB. I used to be really sharp and do any job, you know. But er it's no good to apologise! Er...*(There were tears in his eyes).*

He continually spoke of the importance of accepting life and others:

RB. Yes! I'm..I always try to have things easier really! There's no sense, you know, trying to make it ten times difficult..You don't want that do you?

He did not appear to have any major regrets about his life. His conversation suggested that he felt he had done his best. He had enjoyed his life:

RB. Everything that I've done, I've done purposely and that's it! So I've no sense in... *(He gave a little laugh)*...I shouldn't have done that, or I shouldn't have done this.. You just do the best things you can, don't you?

RB. I've.. I've enjoyed it! I've made mis mistakes, we all do. There's no one can tell me they've made no mistakes and things like that, but I <u>know</u>, I think I'm I'm just as good good as most.....

Again as with other informants, Mr. Biddley said that he enjoyed conversations with the researcher:

RB. You and I talking our bits... Quite decent isn't it?

Although Mr. Biddley deteriorated rapidly during the course of the investigation, and, indeed, was admitted to the secure wing of a psychogeriatric nursing home, he was still able to enjoy much of our time together. Compared to other informants, this timespan may have been short, but it existed. For a short while he benefitted from the psychotherapeutic aspects of the study.

Mr. Melvin Rider

Mr. Rider was also an informant who enjoyed meeting other people. His illness had severely damaged his cognitive abilities but, even so, he found many of the interviews to be pleasant. This apparent enjoyment was displayed more by his affectionate behaviour rather than his conversation.

He enjoyed recalling his times of past accomplishments:

MR. .....And it was good good good!

MR. Oh it's good good days!
Int. Good days?...Good days
MR. Yes, yes yes yes....*(He gave a lovely joyous smile as he said this. His tone of voice sounded happy).*

He seemed to have no major regrets that he could recall, concerning his life:

Int. You've had a good life? ....

MR. Mmm....

Int. Do you have any regrets?

MR. *(Paused)*.. No! Does it gain, no.....Good!

However, Mr. Rider did have many major concerns and anxieties which were concerned with the present. Like Mr. Silverthorne, his illness had led to a state of powerlessness. There were times when he was bereft at being separated from his wife. This was never more apparent than during the interview which took place on the secure ward of the setting. Was the process of disclosure during these times good for him? This is difficult to say. I certainly felt we had shared some very painful times, and this may suggest possible therapeutic implications for him. Even so, I am still not sure, and perhaps this is for others to judge. Mr. Rider was always delighted to see me and welcomed me with great hugs and expressions of affection. Possibly this alone might indicate that he found the process of the investigation to be beneficial for him. His recounted experience of the subjective world of the dementia sufferer could decidedly benefit other victims of this illness, through changes in practice and strategies in the management of this disease.

Mr. Andrew Coxley

Mr. Coxley was a slow speaking quiet man who initially found it difficult to speak of his concerns and feelings. He appeared to be the

sort of person who "tucked it all away" as Mrs. Woodley would say. He did not readily display his emotions. However, Mr. Coxley enjoyed taking part in the investigation. His memory loss was mild and he was well able to remember our conversations and to look forward to our meetings. Initially he reminisced about his work on the farm, a time that gave him great pleasure:

AC. Yeah. Open air wan it, yes. I used to love it.

As the interviews progressed, he began to speak of his troubled childhood. Gradually it became apparent that he had never fully resolved his grief and guilt over his mother:

Int. Mmm.....So all the memories of your mother, are they mostly sad memories really?

AC. Yes. They are really.

Int. Mmm.....

AC. Wasn't really old enough to understand, you know.....

He tried very hard to believe that he had done his best for her:

AC. Well that's what I've often thought that but.....I done what I could, and well I got to the stage where you couldn't do anything else for her.....*(Tears filled his eyes).*

Even towards the end of the investigation, he spoke of his feelings at being in the same setting as his mother:

AC. Yes....She was then over there. (*He looked out of the*

window towards the building, where he used to visit his mother on Sunday afternoons). **That place haunts me, over there.**

AC. Well,. it do when I come that....no which...where was she as it happens? Oh, it's that bit over there.*(Pointed out of window to a building).* I hate coming.....round that bit.

However, Mr. Coxley was able to speak of much his past life with acceptance. He often reminisced about aspects of his life on the farm. He was aware that these days were never to return:

Int. Those were the days weren't they?
AC. Oh yes! All gone now though!.....
Int. Everything changes though, Andy, doesn't it?
AC. Yes!.....Go over the years don't it?.....

However, speaking of them gave him pleasure:

Int. So, were good days were they?
AC. Yes. Won't come back no more will they? I don't think.
Int. I think when you think about them, they come back don't they?
AC. Well, they seem to. Yes.
Int. Does it give you pleasure to think about them?
AC. Yes.

Overall, he enjoyed the process of the interviews. He felt it had been helpful talking to me:

AC. Oh yes! Makes a difference for the say, don't it?

Again, this informant benefitted from the psychotherapeutic approach used throughout this investigation. Unlike Mrs. Woodley, we were never able to fully resolve his grief and guilt over his mother, but possibly speaking about it allowed him to come to terms with much that had been worrying him. He was able to say that he had tried to do his best. However, he was constantly reminded of this part of his life by his present environment.

More positive aspects of his reminiscence was his ability to recall his beloved farm and his tractor. He was also able to act as a teacher/historian, and, indeed, he taught me to view agricultural work from a different perspective. This gave him great pleasure and contentment.

Mr. Hugh Raft

Mr. Raft was one of the saddest informants of the group. He became part of the investigation purely for therapeutic purposes, and most of his case-study describes the personal therapeutic benefits of the investigation. He was a quiet man with limited insight concerning his behaviour and relationships. Further, he had a poor self image which was probably due to his emotional neglect and physical abuse in his early childhood years. Reports from his wife and other carers, who had known him for some years, prior to the onset of dementia, suggest that his adaptive self was not strong. The progression of his illness and life circumstances further weakened this part of his personality, allowing his very vulnerable experiential self to come

under attack (Kitwood, 1988). There was great stress in his life. Initially, at the beginning of the investigation, he was a very unhappy man who often wished he was dead:

HR. .....But er...it is a good I think you if you can get dead somehow!

HR. I am sad! *(Tears filled his eyes).* I've been sad a long time darling.

However, as the interviews progressed he gradually became happier. He possessed sufficient insight to acknowledge that the investigation had been partly responsible for this:

HR. Any rate, thanks to you ...Thanks to everybody else, I'm here. Especially thanks to you.....
Int. Well, I don't think I've done a lot.
HR. Yes you have! You you coming along cheers me up don't it?

Life began to improve for him:

Int. How do you feel about life at the moment? Is it quite good?
HR. It's been very very good.
Int. So you've been happy? You're feeling happier?
HR. Yes. Yes.

Int. But life's better for you now?
HR. It's a hundred per cent better, yes....

By the end of the investigation, he saw himself as a different person:

HR. .....You done a lot for me, haven't you?!

Int. Why?

HR. What a different man I became! Be truthful!

For this informant the therapeutic benefits of the investigation are very evident and he continues to be happy at the time of writing. He is now in the same psychogeriatric nursing home as Mrs. Pinks and Mr. Biddley. However, unlike Mr. Biddley, he is not in the secure wing of this establishment. Mr. Raft thinks that he works there. He feels valued and happy.

There are a number of possible explanations for this. The process of the investigation allowed him to form a stable and successful relationship with myself. He also had a good relationship with his social worker. Both these relationships gave him respect and encouragement. They would appear to have supported him throughout a very stressful period in his life.

Further, the exploration of his earlier life, the death of his first wife, and his painful relationships in the present, allowed him to re-evaluate and thus, rewrite his narrative. In general terms, he saw his life as less bleak and himself as more worthwhile, even as his illness progressed.

This might of course, be attributed to the process of dementia. It might be argued that Mr. Raft may have forgotten that he was ever unhappy, and that this absence of remembered unhappiness led him

to believe he was happy. However, the absence of a negative feeling state does not ensure the presence of a positive feeling state. Feeling states are based on biological, psychological, and social processes.

As the interviews progressed, Mr. Raft slowly moved from a negative state of mind to a more positive state of mind. He implied that he felt good about himself and pleased with life. Feeling good about himself allowed him to experience, and to report, feelings of increased well-being.

It is suggested that all informants at various stages during the interviews reported feelings of well-being. This would suggest that they, too, felt good about life during this time. A number of references have been made to this therapeutic finding, and it is now appropriate to examine this area in more detail.

6.4 CONSIDERATIONS OF PERSONALITY TRAITS WITHIN DEMENTIA

Feelings of well-being are associated with the personality trait of extraversion, which is seen as one of the five major basic personality traits in human functioning, as identified by McCrae and Costa (1987). McAdams (1990) suggests that the 'big five', traits of extraversion/introversion (E), neuroticism (N), openness to experience (O), agreeableness/antagonism (A) and conscientiousness/undirectedness (C), are generally accepted as providing a rough but useful taxonomy in personality research. Further, it is posited by Costa and McCrae (1988) and Digman (1990) that basic personality traits in adult humans are well established

and suffer little change throughout life.

Recent research by Siegler et al (1991) and Williams et al (1994) suggest that there are personality changes which are associated with dementia. Further, Eysenck (1967) has speculated that some personality traits, such as extraversion/introversion and neuroticism, are caused by varying response times in brain function and structures. These brain structures and processes are known to become compromised in dementia (Damasio et al 1990). However, this biological underpinning of traits is not universally accepted within trait psychology. McAdams (1990) argues that personality traits are more generally seen as a product of both nature and nurture.

Nevertheless, the research into personality changes in dementia has highlighted changes in the personality traits of extraversion, neuroticism and conscientiousness, with sufferers of dementia becoming less extraverted and conscientiousness but more neurotic. The study by Siegler et al (1991) also found informants to be slightly less open, but with little difference in the trait of agreeableness. Williams et al (1994) found little mean difference in these two traits. These studies relied on carers completing personality inventories on those in their care. Thus, all reported personality changes relied on carer's interpretations.

The dimensions of personality traits encompass many aspects of human behaviour. McAdams (1990), among others, suggests that extraverts are seen as outgoing, sociable and impulsive people. Conscientious people are typified as being more conscientious,

careful, reliable, well-organised, self-disciplined and persevering. People who might be labelled as neurotic will experience chronic anxiety, depression, emotional lability, nervousness, moodiness, hostility, vulnerability, self consciousness and hypochondriasis.

Eysenck (1973) perceives low E and high N in terms of the classical concept of a melancholic personality, which incorporates such behaviours as chronic sadness, anxiousness, pessimism, and moodiness. Thus, studies suggest that sufferers of dementia are more likely to become melancholic personalities with more undirectedness, which will be manifest in such behaviours as carelessness, disorganisation, undependability, and negligence.

Although this present investigation was not concerned with informants personalities, but rather their emotional memories, a review of informant's conversations, suggests that they were, on occasion, subject to aspects of the melancholic personality, combined with obvious undirectedness. However, on other occasions they were not. Some personality traits changed quite dramatically. Mrs. Woodley moved from a state of sadness to a state of happiness, as did Mr. Raft. Other informants moved in and out of these sad/happy states more readily.

The informants, therefore, did not display increasing N and lowered E and C as the investigation progressed. However, some of the informants who were in, or entering, the terminal stages of the illness, did display such traits. Further, informants primary carers may have reported such changes, had they been asked. All that can be said is that informants did not consistently display these

identified changes in personality traits to the researcher, during the interviews. This may have been due to the psychotherapeutic approach used throughout the investigation.

However, if this approach did mitigate negative changes in personality, it is possible to suggest that changing personality traits in dementia may be influenced, in part, by the social and psychological management of the illness. Managing dementia, especially for primary carers is, of course, very stressful. Carers, too, may be adversely affected by the malignant social psychology which surrounds this illness. This may have some implications for research into personality changes in dementia, when personality inventories are completed by carers. However, most aspects of work with dementia sufferers involves stress for all dementia care workers. This investigation, itself, was no exception.

Therapeutic Implications and Researcher Stress.

Although the overall approach was beneficial to informants and to the investigation, it was not without some difficulties for the researcher. It was not always easy to listen at this level. It was found to be tiring and draining. The emotions displayed by informants themselves, were often negative, powerful and intense. Occasionally these feelings transferred themselves to the researcher, who during these times felt helpless, vulnerable and forlorn. This is a finding that has also been reported by Froggatt (1988), Gibson (1994), and Mills and Coleman (1994).

Therapeutic Implications and the Main Setting Used in the Investigation

Throughout the investigation, there were regular meetings between the researcher and staff in the day hospital. All staff were very interested in the process and outcomes of the interviews. As the investigation slowly concluded, reminiscence group work began to take place on a regular basis. This group was run by the deputy of the unit who had an interest in counselling. The group proved to be popular with the clients in the setting and the senior charge nurse said there was never any problem in attendance. "They queue up to get in there," he said. He was asked if he felt that the investigation had had anything to do with the formation of the reminiscence group. The senior charge nurse said that it had always been an area of interest, but that they had never organised a formal group for this activity. He felt that the investigation had highlighted the therapeutic benefits of reminiscence, it had "drawn their attention" to its importance. At the time of writing the reminiscence group continues to run most successfully.

6.5 GENERAL CONSIDERATIONS OF THE THERAPEUTIC IMPLICATIONS OF THE STUDY

Although the overall therapeutic aspects of the investigation were found to be beneficial, the intensity of disclosure varied amongst informants. This was probably due to the personality of the informants, together with the extent of cognitive impairment caused by their illness. However, there are also cultural and social implications associated with disclosure. According to Rogers (1961)

most individuals need to feel emotionally safe and in a trusting relationship before speaking of emotional problems, or the deep emotions associated with past experiences.

This group of informants belong to a older generation for whom this rule was especially strong. Equally, one must look to the skills of the researcher. Perhaps another researcher with more developed skills might have enabled all informants to disclose more deeply. The most likely conclusion is that the amount of disclosure generated from informants depended on all of these considerations. Coleman (1986) argues that not all older people will want to reminisce, and Scrutton (1989) suggests that it is very likely that not all older people will want to discuss/disclose their emotional past. Other investigations concerned with this area of research may also experience similar findings. However, whatever the level of disclosure, all informants experienced some benefits from being part of the investigation.

Another area of possible interest is the informants personalities, prior to the onset of this illness. Hillgard et al (1979, p.601.) defines personality as "the individual characteristics and ways of behaving that, in their organisation of patterning, account for the individual's unique adjustments to his or her environment". Thus, the informants ability to cope with the changes wrought by their illness would, in part, depend on their individual personalities. Further, according to Kitwood (1988), dementia will disrupt the patterns of personality, by severely weakening the cognitively structured, adaptive social self, and leaving the experiential self vulnerable and unable to cope.

Kitwood (1990a) further suggests that this self is vulnerable in all of us, and it is often the locus of hidden pain. To be aware of, and to understand, this part of our beings is psychologically healthy. Most counsellors are required to have a course of personal therapy, prior to counselling others, in order to gain knowledge of their own vulnerabilities and defences. Defences defend, but they can also distance individuals from each other, within close interpersonal interactions. Awareness of one's own areas of vulnerability and the defences employed to protect them, allows the experiential self to become known and understood. It allows this part of the self to grow and to mature. It is possible to suggest that it is the strength of the hidden self which determines the degree of loss which might be tolerated. A vulnerable and immature experiential self would probably be unable to tolerate extreme loss, without external support and/or internal denial.

The maturation process for this part of any person is life long and ends only with death. It is also a highly individualised process with little reference to biological ageing. An older person may have an immature experiential self which is unable to cope with the losses of the ageing process. Kitwood (1988) tentatively suggests that many sufferers of dementia might have highly vulnerable experiential selves, which compound the effects of the illness, or even predispose the elderly person towards that state of cognitive loss. Neuropathic changes found in elderly demented brains during post mortem are present, to some degree, in many non demented elderly brains (Kitwood, 1988, p.126.). Further, Kitwood points to the fact that some elderly people become demented with little accompanying neuropathology.

The narratives of most informants who took part in this study, suggest that they were wounded people who often felt vulnerable and lost. Background information from their relatives, friends and colleagues, further suggest that most informants did experience major trauma and loss, which had great effect on their personalities. These reports, combined with the actual words of the informants, imply that the informants may indeed have had vulnerable experiential selves, prior to the onset of dementia. This is often the result of disturbing earlier experiences.

Mrs. Woodley had a very troubled childhood which left her with little self confidence and a desire to keep the peace at all times. Mr. Silverthorne compartmentalised his life. Work and home were kept very separate. He led a very structured existence, which appeared to have swiftly crumbled as cognitive supports were removed. Mr. Clerkenwell had a troubled childhood. His memories of his father seemed tinged with some anger and bitterness. The loss of his eyesight caused him great pain, and his reported experiences as a POW in the second world war were very traumatic. Mrs. Pinks, too, had experienced loss at a young age. Her father died and she went out to work before she had left school, due to family poverty. She had also lost her only child.

Mr. Biddley seemed to have grown up with a fear of poverty. He worked very long hours and did not believe in wasting money. He, too, led a structured existence. Further, he had a long history of depression, prior to the commencement of Alzheimer's disease. Coleman et al. (1993) suggest that low mention of others outside the family circle appear to be related to low levels of self esteem in the

elderly, which, in turn, is associated with depressive disorders. Mr. Biddley mainly spoke of his relatives during the interviews. He found it difficult to form close relationships and had never married.

Mr. Coxley's memories of his childhood were full of pain and confusion due to his mother's illness. His own poor health caused him to leave his agricultural work, which he loved so much. He was constantly reminded of his mother's illness by the setting. He could see the ward where he visited her from the windows of the day hospital. Mr. Rider, like Mr. Biddley, had a history of depression prior to the diagnosis of Alzheimer's disease. His wife regarded him as something of a perfectionist. Mr. Rider himself said that he wanted everything he did "to be good". Mrs. Rider further felt that his mother had constantly pushed him to achieve when he was young.

The final informant, Mr. Raft, seemingly had the most difficult childhood of all. His memories of this period of his life were very painful. His childhood vulnerability had appeared to remain with him and coloured all aspects of his existence. He was a very unhappy, lonely, and threatened person at the commencement of the investigation.

However, it is not possible to state, without reservation, that these experiences predisposed any informants to the state of dementia. Nonetheless, their life experiences could be said to have wounded them in many ways. Their experiential selves may have been hidden and immature, and unable to withstand the onslaught of cognitive loss. The only evidence that would support this theory is the fact that all informants experienced therapeutic benefits from this

investigation. Again, using Kitwood's arguments, this may have been due to the psychotherapeutic approach used throughout the interviews, in which informants feelings, or vulnerable experiential selves, were supported and validated (Kitwood 1988, 1990a, 1990b).

It is, of course, difficult to say if interventions would have helped at earlier stages of informant's illnesses. However, many of my own residents have some form of dementing illness and a similar psychotherapeutic approach is used with them. Some of these residents have been with us for a considerable number of years, and it is noticeable that their rate of cognitive decline tends to proceed more slowly, when compared to the cognitive rate of decline in residents admitted more recently.

There are, of course, a number of other factors which would help to account for this slow decline of cognitive abilities. Some of these factors might be incorporated in the provision of an enriched environment which allows residents to develop greater autonomy. Studies by Annerstedt et al (1987) and Karlsson et al (1987) suggest that it is the lessening of staff restrictions on autonomy which contributed to positive changes in levels of functioning. Nonetheless, these developmental theories of personality are of great interest to those of us who are involved in any way with dementia care. They highlight the acute vulnerability of dementia sufferers and the imperative need for them to have understanding and support from all carers and managers in this area of work. The brief discussions of theories of personality in this chapter, suggest that this is a topic worthy of further exploration.

Other considerations of the therapeutic implications for informants of this study, were the long term relational aspects of the investigation. Dementia care traditionally involves change, both for the clients and carer. Many aspects of these changes are perceived as unwarranted and threatening by older people with dementia. During this study I was the only interviewer, and I became a familiar and remembered visitor to the setting. This provision of constancy appeared to form part of the therapeutic benefits of the investigation.

6.6 CONSIDERATIONS OF THE COUNSELLING SKILLS USED DURING THIS STUDY

The therapeutic outcomes of this study indicate the importance of interviewer counselling skills. All too often, counselling is seen as a relatively low level skill that can be managed by most health care professionals. This is not the case. It is unfortunate that counselling has a wide generic meaning which can be applied to a variety of situations from phone in agencies to psychoanalytic encounters. Counselling is more than the possession of high level interpersonal skills.

At a psychotherapeutic level, it involves intense contact between the client and the counsellor in a series of planned interviews. It is a discipline that has its own forms of training and recognised levels of expertise. These forms of training are allied to the various psychotherapeutic disciplines, all of which cluster under the umbrella of counselling. The counselling strategies used throughout this investigation were psychotherapeutic in nature.

During this study, the most common counselling strategy used was based on Rogerian principles. This might be understood as a simple form of counselling in which the interviewer reflects and shares the world of the client. Some extracts from conversations between the informants and the interviewer illustrate the principles of reflection:

AW No! No, I got no courage for that!

Int. No courage for that?

AW. Oh the burns were horrible!

Int. They were horrible?

RS. Lillian Rose, yes

Int. Lillian Rose.

RS. Yes and a very nice smart word she is too

Int. A very nice smart.....?

CC. Well....*(He sighed)* What have I achieved? ....One asks.....

Int. What do you think you've achieved?

CC. *(Pause)*. He mostly ran away, I think!

Int. He ran away?

BP. I did, did yes. Yes, of course. I lived in Borham Rectory before I left school.

Int. Before you left school?

HR. Noo! Not not family wise, no.

Int. Not family wise?

The reflection of content allows the client to feel that their message has been heard and acknowledged. It has not been rejected, overlooked or dismissed. Further, this acceptance of the message leads to understanding and empathy. The use of primary level empathy, in which the client's expressed feelings are acknowledged within the counselling relationship, encourages disclosure:

Int. **And you've been married a long time....It's good!**

MR. **Mm! And we d don't go far. We w de go....like e e each other.**

Int. **So you never knew...you used to come home from school and you wouldn't know what she was going like?**

AC. **No, no.....Didn't...Never had no tea ready or anything, you know...**

Int. **Mmm.....You feel helpless, don't you?**

AC. **Yes! You feel you want to go somewhere and get some help. Don't help, but you can't!.....But when she was alright, you know, she were alright. You couldn't wish for anybody better, but it didn't last long see.....Just come over her or summat, I suppose I don't know.....**

AC. **She died in there, You see.....I went in there one afternoon and she was gone.....**

Int. **Did you feel it was a blessed release really?**

AC. **Yes, I did!.....**

Int. **Mmm.....**

AC. **I sort of come out, went to get me bike.....I..I didn't sort**

of realise it that she were gone, but I sort of thought, well that's er a lovely release.

The use of primary level empathy led to advanced accurate empathy, which is an interpretative response. The feelings and emotions experienced by the client, which are implicit in their words, are gently made explicit by the counsellor. The use of advanced accurate empathy by the interviewer allowed informants to disclose at a deeper level. This is indicated by the following excerpt from an interview with Mrs. Pinks. She had said that she went to work before she left school. I felt that she was trying to say that she lost her freedom at a young age. She was working when, perhaps, she still felt like playing with her friends:

BP. Oh yes! I missed playing outside and.....

Int. You became grownup before wanted to!

BP. I..I did! Actually I did! Yes. Because I was always looked on as a little girl, but all of a sudden I was turned into a grown woman!

Int. Yes..

BP. Just like that!

An acknowledgement of Mr. Biddley's desire to see his story as as yet uncompleted, led him to admit failure, but to still see himself as worthwhile:

Int. So you think you've had a good life do you?

RB. Well I'm not ready to give up the ghost yet! *(He laughed).*

Int. Oh no...Well lets say, 'So far'. So far, has it been ok?

RB. I've.. I've enjoyed it! I've made mis mistakes, we all do. There's no one can tell me they've made no mistakes and things like that, but I know, I think I'm I'm just as good good as most.....

The use of advanced accurate empathy also allowed Mr. Clerkenwell to discuss his great sadness over his failing eyesight:

CC. A blow comes with this thing. It's when.....specialist says "I'm...I'm sorry it will never better", you know. Oh thank you very much!

Int. That must have been a terrible blow...

CC. What dear?

Int. That must have been a terrible blow..

CC. Yes, it is you think, well it'll be all right one day, you know.....And then this chap in his very.. e....r what can I say his um.....thorough examination after several... well several months! .....And then I said, "Surely there must be some improvement?!" But, "I'm afraid not..Not in your case!.....Just not showing any improvement! And after a long examination I'm sure there will not be one!"

Int. I feel sad that that should happen to you.....

CC. Yes, you go along thinking there's hope you know. There's always hope, and then you find er he's only doing his job anyway, and you find there is no hope! *(CC. gave a wry chuckle)*.....Except by some magic.....

The identification of the feelings experienced by Mr. Rider during his

stay in the secure unit, allowed him to express himself with painful fluency:

Int. And you feel angry?

MR. I do! Very ! Very!

Int. Very angry...yes.....Do you feel people are making you do things?

MR. What!

Int. Do you feel people are telling you what to do?

MR. N No!

Int. No.....

MR. N N N N I can't can't can't do d told. I I I not not not said! I've never seen la seen er ...and anything else! And that's what's on on on my my my bad head! ***(MR. sounded frustrated and angry).***

Int. That's what on your mind?...All the time?

MR. Yes! Yes! ***(Said quietly and calmly).***

Int. And you're very upset.....

MR. I I am! ***(Again said clearly).***

Int. I'm upset for you. I feel sad that you're upset.....I don't like.....I feel sad for you.....

Mr. Coxley was also able to discuss his feelings concerning his mother through the use of advanced accurate empathy. Interviewer sympathy, and understanding of his need to hear that he had done his best, allowed him to accept that this was indeed so:

AC. Well that's what I've often thought that, but.....I done what I could and well I got to the stage where you couldn't

do anything else for her.....(*Tears filled his eyes and had done so several times throughout this interview).*

Int. No.....Sometimes you just can't win whatever you do.....

AC. No! I used to come in here and I don't know what she's going to be like today, and then she'd have one of her moods on, you know, and I couldn't get nowhere with her.....

Additional methods, other than Rogerian strategies, were also explored. One such method is to seek for repeated patterns of behaviour. These behaviours are often learned in early childhood and establish the basis for most adult behaviours. Occasionally, it was possible to enable informants to understand the effects of their early experiences. Mrs. Woodley was able to understand that her mother's influence had allowed her to feel unworthy and unloved. As a child she probably felt that it was her fault that she was unlovable. These feelings of unworthiness as a child seemed to have created anxieties which were always with her. Mrs. Woodley admitted that she had always been a worrier:

Int. You carry it on your shoulder.....So a born worrier?

AW. Mm.....

Int. Probably your mum started that off though, wasn't it?

AW. Oh yes!

Int. Because if you were brought up like that.....

AW. It follows doesn't it?

She expressed surprise that she was liked in the setting and indicated that she felt unworthy of this. However, she was again able to see her mother's influence in this view of herself:

Int. Everyone likes you here.

AW. I can't understand that at all.

Int. You can't understand that ?

AW. No. All the badness running through.

Int. All the badness running through you?

AW. Yes.

Int. That's your mother talking Abigail!

AW. Yes!

Mr. Raft was another informant who was able to make conscious connections between his poor upbringing and his poor self image.

HR. Yes..Yes.. I had a self...bad image of meself, cause of me parents.

Int. Yes.....Yes....

HR. Used to get some bloody good hidings, mind. I'm not ashamed to admit it. Cor! I used to get whacked!

He, too, seemed to feel unworthy and unloved. However, he questioned why he was not loved and helped by others. He felt it was unfair. He felt he deserved better:

HR. I'm silly like that.....I I help anybody, but the little buggers don't seem to want to help me!

Often, apparent repeated behaviours due to past life experiences were not recognised by the informants, but were still able to be addressed during the interviews. Mr. Silverthorne experienced intense frustration over his inability to control managerial aspects of the setting. This was most obviously expressed over transport arrangements:

RS. What's the time?

Int. The time's er just quarter past two. The car won't come just yet.

RS. Yes, but it doesn't take long to set em up and gets 'em. Because some of the girls don't wasn't to mmm....get away.

Int. So do you worry that you will miss the bus?

RS. I do of course! Cause I've been a long time on it.

Int. Do you feel you've been here a long time?

RS. I know I've been here a long time, yes!

Mr. Clerkenwell occasionally experienced the setting as a prison. He was contained in the present as he was, so many years ago, by the Japanese:

CC. The trouble is, I'm chained in here you see. I can't just get up and walk out.

Int. Do you get fed up with coming here?

CC. Only in the sense I like... seeing people and so.....No I like coming here but what I object to is the doors clang behind me, and there's....I have a feeling I've just walked in into Pentonville, or some..similar prison. And I can't get out again until the warder er gives a nod, you know, and

says, "Right you can..."

His perception of the setting as a prison, appeared to bring forth memories of his time as a POW. Many of these stories were new to me. This seeking of repeated patterns of behaviour, as with other psychoanalytic schools of thought, forms part of the psychodynamic approach to counselling. Hausman (1992) suggests that psychodynamic counselling can be effectively used with clients who have some form of dementia.

The Psychodynamic Approach

The psychodynamic approach is part of the psychoanalytic school of thought in that, within the counselling relationship, areas of client concern are illuminated and explored. Past concerns can produce multi-layered anxieties, all of which must be defended in order to minimise psychological pain. Defence mechanisms themselves can be many and varied. The psychodynamic counsellor must, therefore, be aware of defence mechanisms which mask anxieties. Exploration of these two phenomena should lead to the source of conflict. Thus, psychodynamic counselling is interactive and interpretative. The use of the psychodynamic approach during this investigation allowed a greater understanding of all informants by the interviewer. This understanding of client's concerns was not always equal. The nature of their illness frequently inhibited this process of understanding. However, the ability of some informants to share in a new understanding of themselves is a measure of the strength of the interpretative relationship.

It was possible to understand Mrs. Woodley's negative view of herself through the exploration of her relationship with her mother. Further, Mrs. Woodley, herself, gained understanding which was retained on some level, after completion of the interviews. Mr. Silverthorne's frustration and unhappiness over his loss of autonomy was easier to understand when one considered his compartmentalised life, and the many years he had 'managed' others. Mr. Clerkenwell, too, could be understood more clearly when seen in the context of his whole life. He had been abandoned by his father for whom he appeared to feel much contempt. This probably overlaid his deeper feelings of rejection and unworthiness. His time in Changi prison was painful for him and he found it hard to accept and understand the cruelty of his captors. Again, his present life contained much that reminded him of his POW days. The loss of his eyesight seemed to underpin much of his present grief and unhappiness. This comparatively new grief appeared to trigger off many old, and possibly unresolved, griefs. He, himself, was able to have insight into the effects of his many losses on his levels of well-being.

The fifth informant, Mrs. Pinks, had had some severe griefs in her life, but many of these had been repressed and/or forgotten. The death of her son must have been painful for her. Other experiences which were told to me by her husband, and not disclosed by herself, were reported as being very hurtful for her. Mrs. Pinks always wished to recall only the pleasant and happy things of her life. This would suggest that she might have defended herself against unhappy memories prior to her illness. The psychodynamic approach allows understanding of her use of this defence. Denial might have been necessary in the past, in order to allow her to cope with life traumas.

It certainly appeared to protect her in the present. It allowed her to be a happy lady who seemed to be remarkably free from anxieties.

Mr. Coxley, too, could be more easily understood through the use of this approach. His tumultuous childhood appeared to have left him with the need to seek stability and solace through his work on the land. His grief over his mother remained largely unresolved, and he was constantly reminded of this phase in his life by his own presence in the setting. Mr. Coxley was able to explore some of his grief during the interviews at his own pace. The interpretative approach requires great sensitivity in staying with the client, yet tentatively exploring the topic under discussion. The counsellor must listen intently to ensure that the client is ready and able to confront/discuss the topic at a deeper level. The counsellor too, must be aware of his or her own personal prejudices which may hinder this process. I was conscious that Mr. Coxley, at times, was speaking of topics which were deeply meaningful for him, and which he did not discuss with his wife.

Yet another of the informants, Mr. Rider was understood on a psychodynamic level. He had achieved academically and was justifiably proud of his successes. His illness stripped away his memories of his competencies and left him bereft. He was always trying to centre or locate himself in the present. He wanted to be with his wife because he knew her and loved her. He became angry and violent when he was prevented from returning to her, or to known and familiar locations such as his home. The sharing of his anguish permitted great understanding of this man.

Kitwood (1990b) suggests that those of us who work in the field of

dementia care need to 'hold' and support the shattered personality of the elderly person with dementia. I endeavoured to return to Mr. Rider a sense of well-being and personhood even in the midst of his devastating illness. Occasionally I felt that I succeeded, but there were many occasions that I felt that I had failed. However, I understood how he was feeling, and how he perceived, and understood, his present world.

Mr. Raft, the final informant, benefitted from the use of the psychodynamic approach. Through his stories I was able to understand much of his behaviour. He himself was able to make use of this knowledge by displaying greater understanding of the effects of his traumatic childhood on his life. Much of this understanding was implicit rather than explicit, in that he was able to take a more objective stance when speaking of his painful past. At the beginning of the investigation he assumed the role of victim with great ease. This was not so obvious at the conclusion of the investigation.

Discussion

A review of the counselling strategies used during this investigation suggests that they played a significant role in the therapeutic benefits experienced by all informants. Further, it suggests that the degree of interviewer counselling skills necessary for this work needed to be of a certain informed standard. The content and length of training courses in counselling techniques is very varied.

The British Association of Counselling is endeavouring to instil a sense of unity into the many counselling courses which are run by

various organisations throughout the country. However, a full time diploma course in counselling, is normally of one to two years duration, with an agreed number of some hundreds of supervised counselling hours, which are necessary for accreditation. These awards are not given lightly, and require time and commitment on the part of the student. Nevertheless, this form of training would appear necessary for those workers who wish to engage in life review counselling with older people, with or without dementia.

The importance of adequate training for carers of the elderly has only achieved full prominence in recent years. Prior to this time, the picture was very different. It would be a retrograde step to assume that carers of elderly people need only a short basic eight week course in counselling to qualify them to undertake in-depth work of this nature. However, Fleming et al (1986) and Roybal (1988) during the discussion of psychotherapeutic interventions for the elderly in chapter one of this work, suggest that this is an area which is under resourced. This is especially true for those older people with dementia.Gardner (1993) and Hausman (1992) argue that the concept of providing a professionally recognised service for this client group is exciting and innovatory. It might well become one of the major strategies for use in the developing paradigm of dementia care.

6.7 CONSIDERATIONS OF THE ETHICAL JUSTIFICATION FOR THIS STUDY

It is at this point that the question of ethical justifications for this investigation should be addressed. Is it ethical to ask older people with dementia about their memories of the past when these

memories are likely to be painful? Should one leave well alone? What right have we to intrude into their private griefs and fears? These questions must, and should, be answered. Firstly, one must ask if it is right not to ask older people with dementia of their concerns? Humanitarian principles alone would suggest that it is wrong not to address these concerns. The locus of the inherent conflict surrounding this issue, centres on the depth of exploration. The intensive discussion on the use of counselling principles, adhered to throughout this study, argues that this is an area that should not be undertaken by under qualified workers. Therefore, it is assumed that all workers who help older people to explore painful experiences, will themselves have the expertise to handle delicate, painful and sensitive material, together with the relational aspects of this work.

The issue of whether older people with dementia are able to cope with this type of exploration is linked to the expertise of the worker, but also to their own ability to handle grief and loss. Coleman (1994, p.18) suggests that it is important to bear in mind that loss and griefwork are essential parts of the experience of ageing. Guttman (1980), too, suggests that older people in general are well equipped to handle grief. Most older people with dementia will have experienced the many losses that accompany the ageing process, before the onset of their illness. This illness will, itself, have generated more substantial loss which some sufferers may wish to share with others. Again, there will be some who will not, but they should all be offered the opportunity. This investigation suggests that there were some informants who welcomed the opportunity for disclosure more than others. This would probably be the case with other older people with dementia. The choice must be theirs. However, it will be recalled that

no informant refused to disclose/discuss painful experiences with the interviewer, and all informants, without exception, benefitted from the experience. Ethical justification for this study would appear to rest on the degree of skills offered by the researcher/interviewer and, again, highlights the importance of professional training for this type of intervention.

To those highly private individuals, who would themselves dislike the intrusive aspect of this therapeutic relationship, and perceive all older people with dementia as having similar feelings, one must answer that these informants, like the critic, have the right to refuse to take part. It is however, morally wrong not to allow these vulnerable, and often unhappy, confused older people, the opportunity to share their loneliness, pain, and fear, with a caring, supportive, and knowledgeable 'other'. Perhaps the final words on the ethical justification for this study should be left to Robert Davis, who, in his moving account of his own journey into dementia, says, I want to shout, 'Be gentle with your loved ones. Listen to them. Hear their whispered pain' (Davis 1989, p. 18).

This discussion on the ethical justification for this study forms part of the psychotherapeutic implications found amongst the informants who took part in the investigation. This chapter suggests that these interventions might have highly significant implications for other older people with dementia. This however, is one aspect of the investigation. Theoretical considerations of the findings from this study have yet to be discussed.

CHAPTER SEVEN

THE LOSS OF NARRATIVE IDENTITY IN DEMENTIA

7.1 INTRODUCTION

This chapter is concerned with the theoretical considerations of this study, and the implications for future practice and research. These theoretical considerations will include life review, and life review counselling, as informants were often inclined to evaluate individual experiences, and to comment on their lives as a whole. Further, the emotions associated with the recall of informant's autobiographical memories have been shown to be of importance. The emotional repertoire of older people with dementia is deemed to be a central feature of this work and has significance within the new culture of dementia care. It is proposed to examine this finding in the context of the literature, together with informant's narratives which are based on the recall of emotional past events.

The main discussion of this chapter, however, is focussed on the loss of the life story, or personal narrative, in dementia and, thus, the eventual loss of narrative identity. All informants suffered some loss of personal narrative throughout the process of this investigation. Loss of narrative would, therefore, seem an integral part of the dementing process. Moreover, this finding is supported by observations of other patients in the setting, together with personal experience of residents within my own Home. The discussion of the implications of this finding will include these observations. Finally, the chapter will conclude with an examination of the major findings of this study, and a review of the work as a whole.

7.2 THEORETICAL CONSIDERATIONS RELATED TO THE MEMORIES OF INFORMANT'S.

All informants had emotional memories available for recall. These memories were autobiographical in nature, and concerned events which happened many years ago. The findings support Conway (1990) who suggests that these memories are detailed, comparatively resistant to forgetting, and highly available for recall. Further, they were all concerned with self experiences. Brewer (1986) argues that autobiographical stories are concerned with the self. The informants, indeed, told stories of themselves. These often fragmented self stories formed part of the narrative, or life story, of informants.

Van Hoesen and Damasio (1987) indicate that the neuronal damage associated with dementia typically compromise functions of memory. However, as discussed in some detail during chapter two of this work, Moscovitch and Umiltà (1990) suggest that there is a non hippocampal route to memory involved in the laying down and retrieval of old but frequently recalled memories. The repetitious nature of many of the informant's stories may support this suggestion.

Salaman (1982) suggests that emotional autobiographical memories carry personally relevant meanings, and it is these meanings which were so important. For some informants, these meanings may have become clearer in maturity, allowing a certain strength to be added to these memories. Not all of the strongly emotional memories of informant's were without conflicting meanings. However, Salaman suggests that resolution is possible, and, indeed, for some

informants, such as Mrs. Woodley, Mr. Coxley, and Mr. Raft, a certain sense of resolution did seem to occur following a period of life review.

7.3 CONSIDERATIONS OF THE LINK BETWEEN EMOTIONS AND COGNITION

All informants indicated theoretical links between cognition and emotion through their recall of a personal past. There is, as has been discussed, a posited relationship between memory and emotion within the cognitive school of thought. Interest in this area is to be found in the work of such theorists as Averill (1986), Baddeley (1990), Bower (1981), Bower and Cohen (1982), Eysenck and Keane (1990), Gilligan and Bower (1984), Leventhal (1984), and Williams et al (1988). The findings from this investigation would suggest that the links between memory and emotion are very strong. The case-studies of informant's appear to offer some support for these theoretical suggestions. Mrs. Woodley made the connection between her lack of confidence and her mother's treatment of her as a child:

Int. Because if you were brought up like that.....

AW. It follows doesn't it?

And Mr. Raft:

HR. Yes..Yes.. I had a self...bad image of meself, cause of me parents.

All informants indicated the importance of emotions in

autobiographical memory. During the interviews every effort was made to follow their emotional expressions. This appeared to enable them to recall more of their memories, thus indicating the significance of the emotions within this study. Further, informants displayed a wide range of emotions throughout the series of interviews. Many of them displayed such emotions as interest, joy, surprise, anger, fear, shame, sadness, and guilt, which are defined by Izard (1991) as belonging to the group of fundamental emotions, which are basic to human nature. However, informants gave less evidence of disgust and contempt when compared to the emotions of interest and enjoyment. Fear, too, was less obvious, but may have occasionally generated the emotion of anger, which was displayed by some informants at times.

The emotions of sadness, guilt and shame were associated with most informant's recollections, except for those of Mrs. Pinks. It will be recalled that this informant preferred to dwell on the pleasant things of life. She did not display undue sadness over the death of her son, for instance, although it could be argued that she had lost many memories of his life and death. Further, Mr. Silverthorne showed little evidence of guilt in his narrative. Throughout many of his interviews, he made it clear that he still thought of others, and he had lived his life according to certain standards.

Mr. Raft, too, denied feeling guilty. He felt that he had been a good person who did his best in all circumstances, regardless of how he was treated by others. It might be argued that it is possible that he did feel this emotion and that he was in a state of denial. This is, however, speculative. Nonetheless, the findindings indicate that most

of the fundemental emotions were still part of informant's memories, to a greater and lesser extent, even in the midst of dementia.

From a scientific stance, emotions may be perceived as an untidy bundle of variables that are probably impossible to isolate and to quantify. Izard (1991), and Leventhal (1984) indicate that they are, however, variables that permeate all aspects of life. It is the relational aspect of these phenomena which is the focus of this work, for emotions, according to the literature, are with us from the moment of birth until death. Izard (1991), Leventhal (1984), and Tomkins (1981, 1987) suggest that they attach themselves to our behaviours, to our experiences, and to our memories. They have a crucial part to play in states of well-being or ill-being, and, as such, occupied a central role in this study of memory within dementia.

The Importance of Emotions within Dementia

The importance of the role of emotions for human beings has been the subject of discussion during chapter two of this work. Their strongly expressed existence within, and throughout, the state of dementia, suggests that they are associated with brain structures that, according to Verwoerdt (1981), remain relatively unaffected throughout long periods of this illness. However, it is unwise to perceive the emotions as being a function of particular locations in the brain, for, as Buck (1988, p.569.) argues, the nervous system is so interconnected that no structure works in isolation. Further, Damasio et al (1990) suggest there is, as yet, no clear indication of the amount of damage that the brain can withstand in dementia before function is compromised.

Some reported outcomes from the work of other practitioners such as Hausman (1992) and Sinason (1992), together with the pilot study (Mills, 1991) which preceded this investigation, might suggest that the addressing of the emotional content of clients/informants recalled experiences may have allowed access, via alternative emotional/cognitive networks, to memories that have remained intact, despite inhibiting changes to neural structures and pathways, caused by the process of dementia. Moreover, emotions, in evolutionary terms, emerged prior to increased cognition. Tomkins (1981) argues that emotions are strongly present in the neonate who, at this time, has immature cognitive processes. This might possibly suggest that the fading of cognitive abilities within dementia, would precede the fading of emotional structures.

Within this study, even the most cognitively impaired informants expressed strongly emotional memories, albeit with limited content. At times, their emotional recall was in sharp contrast to their factual memories of the world. This tentative hypothesis tends to be implicit, rather than explicit, in the works of other theorists. However, the findings from this investigation indicate support the argument that emotional processes within dementia would appear to have considerably more durability than cognitive processes. This finding has significance for the therapeutic interventions used in dementia care work, together with the maintenance of well-being for all dementia sufferers.

Tobin (1991) suggests that preservation of self is one of the adaptive challenges of ageing. It is this aspect of self survival which is so threatened in dementia, for this disease attacks our psychological

existence. Although dementia is a progressive illness, most strategies are concerned with this affliction endeavour to slow down/mitigate its effects. They are concerned, therefore, with the preservation of the psychological life of the sufferer. A 'good' psychological existence implies that individuals are aware of their own existence and identity, an identity which Tobin (1991) suggests, is strengthened by society's acknowledgement of this existence. Nevertheless, within the final stages of the dementing process and, as personal awareness fades, most of the requirements for a good psychological existence are met, almost entirely, by the 'society' surrounding and supporting the dementia sufferer (Kitwood, 1993; Kitwood and Bredin, 1992).

Prior to this point, however, this sense of identity is given to individuals, in part, through the personal narrative or life story. All informants in this study recalled fragments of self stories which were part of their personal narrative. Their stories are moving and they gave all informants identity. They are the type of stories which, as Mr. Clerkenwell said, "live long in the memory of a mind".

7.4 THE IMPORTANCE OF A PERSONAL NARRATIVE WITHIN DEMENTIA

These theoretical considerations, therefore, suggest the importance of encouraging the maintenance of the narrative in dementia. Enabling sufferers of dementia to retain their life story suggests that this enhances the existence of psychological survival of the self which, according to Bender (1994) and Tobin (1991), leads to increased levels of well-being and a return of personhood. However, it must be recognised that the recall/maintenance of a personal narrative

through reminiscence work with older people who have dementia, is only possible during certain stages of the dementing process. Reminiscence work within the final stage of dementia is not practicable. Nonetheless, earlier reminiscence/life review work that has been undertaken with this client group does allow carers to have some knowledge and understanding of those in their care, even when communication, on the part of the sufferer, is reduced to non verbal methods only. For older people with dementia who are able to reminisce, carers who have some knowledge of the practical implications of reminiscence work are able to utilise these skills during group work and in one to one interactions. Further, knowledge of theory and practice aids communication between the carer and the person who is in receipt of care. The encouragement of all methods of communication within this work, forms part of the theory within the new culture of dementia care.

Various methods, which encourage the maintenance/repair of identity in dementia, are concerned with aspects of reminiscence. Coleman (1994, p.8.) argues that within all reminiscence is a life story, or an autobiography, unique to each person. The discussion of reminiscence within chapter one of this work, indicates that this is a multifaceted phenomenon, which has therapeutic implications for demented older people. Coleman (1994) suggests that the use of reminiscence with the aged requires sensitivity in the meeting of individual needs. He stresses the importance of reinforcing positive memories for some older people. This was a strategy employed during this investigation. Other older people, he suggests, need to grieve. Again, this was a finding from this study. Most informants had unresolved griefs, associated in some cases with very old memories.

Further, Coleman perceives the use of life review counselling to be beneficial for some older people. As Knight (1986b) argues, in some sense, all psychotherapy involves some elements of life review.

7.5 CONSIDERATIONS OF INFORMANTS' LIFE REVIEW DURING THE STUDY

Much of the literature concerned with reminiscing interventions used with older people, suggests that this therapeutic work is often used as a group activity which will focus on a discussion about the past. Although an enjoyable activity, this type of reminiscence is not life review. Coleman (1986), Haight (1991), and Wong and Watt (1991), all argue that life review cannot be equated with general reminiscence.

Reminiscence and life review have different goals, although they both use past memories. Haight and Dias (1992) suggest that the main goal of simple reminiscence, which takes place within a group, is to socialise. Coleman (1974) agrees that simple reminiscence is beneficial to older people, but suggests that life review is of more significant benefit. One of the goals of life review is to enable older people to reach a state of integrity through an evaluation of their past. Haight's (1988, 1989a, 1989b) three studies of individual structured life review indicates that all three groups found positive benefits from this process. Haight and Dias (1992) suggest that the most therapeutic way to reminisce is through a structured, evaluative life review performed on an individual basis. The three variables, therefore, which contribute to successful reminiscence are individuality, evaluation, and structure which incorporates the whole

life span. It is the life review modality which is best suited to individual needs in certain situations, such as grief, exploration, evaluation, and the need to move towards a state of integrity. However, the pain that can often accompany the physical aspects of ageing has been shown to influence life review. Walker et al (1990) suggest that older people who have long term painful illnesses tend to recall negative past experiences.

Murphy (1982), in common with a number of other studies, found that physical health problems were linked to depression in the elderly. This has some links with the work of Williams et al (1988 p.168) who suggest that depressed, but not generally anxious subjects may selectively remember negative material. During this investigation, informants who were experiencing painful health problems were found to be lower in mood. Occasionally they felt so ill that they discontinued the interviews, or were disinclined to speak. The role of acute pain within the ageing process is, therefore, of great importance for practitioners and investigators of reminiscence and life review. Elderly people, with painful illnesses, may benefit from psychotherapeutic interventions which may enable them to reinterpret their past more positively.

Butler and Lewis (1974) suggested that life review might be used as a therapy. They described life review as an ongoing self analysis, enhanced by the intervention of a therapist to make the life review more conscious, deliberate, and efficient. Gradually, theorists and practitioners, such as Coleman (1994) and Garland (1994) have begun to advocate the use of life review therapy for older people. However, there is little in the literature of the use of such techniques

with older people who have dementia. Nonetheless, the works of such practitioners as Feil, (1985, 1986, 1992) indicate that she uses many of the goals of life review in her efforts to validate and resolve the feelings and behaviour of such clients.

All informants appeared to review their life at times. This was more obvious in the case-studies of Mr. Clerkenwell, Mr. Coxley, and Mr. Raft. However, these three informants were the least cognitively impaired of the group. Mrs. Woodley, too, appeared to evaluate certain aspects of her life, although this was principally concerned with her relationship with her mother. Further, other informants indicated that they were reviewing aspects of their lives. However, evaluation could have occured earlier in their lives, prior to the onslaught of dementia, and these evaluated events may still have been retained in memory. Therefore, the question of whether all informants actually engaged in life review is speculative. Their words suggest that they evaluated aspects of their lives, and this sense of listening to a life review was stronger in the interviews with less cognitively impaired informants. This finding is supported by Woods et al (1992). Their study indicates that life reviews can be conducted with older people who have mild to moderate levels of cognitive impairment. However, the data suggest that the life reviews of informant's were similar to Gibson's (1994) use of life history work with dementia sufferers.

Within this study, the variables associated with successful life review was applicable to all informants.They engaged in structured life review in that they were encouraged to speak of any aspect of their lives that they wished, and that they could remember. In addition, all

informants were seen individually, and, finally, they appeared to evaluate some of their personal past. Haight and Dias (1992) suggest that this is a very important part of the therapeutic process. Further, they, too, suggest that this intervention of evaluation must be handled with care because of the implication of therapy. Moreover, they regard paraprofessionals as able to undertake this task. However, their discussion of key variables in reminiscence does not include work with confused elderly people, who have a greater vulnerability.

Types of Reminiscence Found in the Investigation

During this study, all informants used various types of reminiscence throughout their interviews. No one interview ever contained just one type of reminiscence, neither was I ever able to anticipate what type of reminiscence would emerge during these times. Although this study was not concerned solely with occurrences/types of reminiscence, it is of interest to note that informants engaged in most types of reminiscence according to Wong and Watt's (1991) comprehensive taxonomy of six types of reminiscences. That is they gave examples of integrative reminiscence which is concerned with a sense of meaning and coherence to the life story. It is also concerned with life review. Thus, this form of reminiscence is evaluative. Yet another type, that of instrumental reminiscence is involved with managing difficult situations and experiences in life. All informants recounted stories of challenging experiences and the manner in which they coped with them. Equally, all spoke of experiences which they found traumatic and which remained unresolved. Further, the category of transmissive reminiscence, which is concerned with the

passing on of wisdom and knowledge was applicable to all informant's stories of the past. It is acknowledged, however, that it was Mr. Clerkenwell and Mr. Coxley who more readily engaged in this facet of reminiscence. Another two categories, that of escapist and obsessive reminiscence is appropriate to describe some informant's recollections, although not unduly. No informant expressed a wish to 'escape' back to earlier times. Nevertheless, it is possible that some informant's recalled memories were unresolved griefs and concerns and, thus, might be labelled as obsessive.

Nevertheless, it is the category of narrative reminiscence which is applicable to each and every informant's series of interviews. During this time all informants told stories, and did so during each and every interview. Their stories were often fragmented, and often difficult to understand, but they gave informants and myself great pleasure. Possibly, some of their stories which could be labelled repetative, or obsessive, might not be regarded as narrative reminiscence, but these stories still formed part of the whole of informant's life experiences. Many people, of varying ages and who are not dementing, will reminisce in a repetative or obsessive manner, especially during periods of life crises and stressful events.

Thus, considerations of the reminiscences of informant's suggest that to a greater or lesser extent, they engaged in all types of reminiscence at times. However, all informants repeatedly and without exception told stories. Narrative reminiscence was therefore, the most significant category for all informants. Watt and Wong perceive instrumental and integrative reminiscence as being most beneficial to older people, with obsessive reminiscence as being the least

beneficial. A review of the findings does suggest that while most informants engaged in types of obsessive reminiscence, they were more frequently concerned with stories of a meaningful and significant past, with themes of survived and surmounted difficulties, interspersed with more simple reminiscences.

Interviews that took place and which were largely filled with simple reminiscence, were enjoyed by all informants. They appreciated the social aspects of our relationship and found much pleasure in laughter. These interviews were experienced by the interviewer, too, as social and enjoyable. I found these types of interviews to feel 'warm and cosy', as opposed to life review type interviews which were full of strong emotion. I found I had to listen with greater intensity during the times informants appeared to review their lives, in order to understand what was being said. These accounts were often painful, and had to be handled with great care. Even so, it appeared to be therapeutic for informants to have their feelings and memories validated by another individual.

Again, although all informants seemed to engage in life review, it did not appear as if all informants did so with the same intensity. Consideration of the life review of informants suggests that all informants engaged in a type of life review, albeit to differing degrees, yet all found it beneficial. All informants entered into a review of some aspects of their lives in the presence of the three key variables of reminiscence, as described by Haight and Dias (1992). Again, the findings from this study would appear to support the beneficial use of these concepts.

Studies of life review, however, require some expansion. The findings from this investigation would suggest that there are differing uses of life review, in that some informants engaged in life review type reminiscence more extensively, and more frequently, than others. This did not appear to be solely related to the degree of cognitive impairment of informants, but rather to the need to tell their story and/or their personalities. Further, the concept of life review, as defined by Butler (1963, p.66) who argues that it is a "naturally occurring, universal mental process characterised by the progressive return to consciousness of past experience ....., prompted by the realisation of approaching dissolution and death, and the inability to maintain one's sense of personal invulnerability", would not appear totally applicable to the informant's evaluative recollections of a personal past.

Moreover, Molinari and Reichlin (1985, p.83.) suggest that not only does life review require an evaluative component, it should also contain conflict in order to allow resolution to occur. Again, it might be argued that it is possible to evaluate one's life without reaching a state of resolution, or perhaps achieving only partial resolution.

Although, as a modality, life review would appear to have a number of variables which would prove worthy of further investigation, it is suggested that a more careful conceptualisation of life review is necessary. Investigations into what makes a good life review are, of course, hedged with difficulties, and this study suggests that types of life review are beneficial. However, this may not be the case for all older people, nor for all older people who have dementia. More stringent guide lines for the use of life review, and life review therapy,

would appear to be needed. These will only come from additional research in this area.

The theories of reminiscence give some understanding of the importance of the life story, or personal narrative of the informants. For the researcher, this understanding came through listening and studying the text of their stories. This was a developmental process and came slowly into being.

7.6 THE PERSONAL NARRATIVES OF INFORMANTS

When each set of interviews began, it was very much a journey into the unknown. I was not sure if any informants would be able to recall emotional memories. I was not sure if they would want to speak about them, even if such memories came to mind. I always felt rather nervous at the beginning. I wondered if they would be able to sustain a long relationship, and if I possessed sufficient of the skills, identified by Bromley (1990) and Haight and Dias (1992) to enable them to do so. I also wondered if they would like me, or if they would reject me. These fears subsided as the investigation progressed. I found that all informants were pleased to speak to me, and our relationships developed into one of mutual liking. Over time, these relationships grew in strength. The informants became very important to me and I became concerned for their welfare.

It was these strong relationships that enabled me to offer the Rogerian concept of unconditional positive regard, which is so necessary for trust and disclosure to develop (Rogers, 1961). This atmosphere of liking and trust allowed all informants to speak about

their more private selves, and the life experiences that had formed their personalities. It is interesting to note that all informants, even the most cognitively impaired, needed time to become used to me before they spoke of their deeper feelings. Initially, I was expecting to find that any emotional memories from this investigation, would relate to similar themes found in the pilot investigation. As I began to analyse the data, I realised that informants were telling me fragmented stories which, over time, cohered into parts of the whole. Further, these fragmented stories centred around themselves. They played the starring role. They were self stories. This novel concept was exciting and, as I read more of the literature, I began to gain some understanding of their life stories in the form of a personal narrative.

A review of the hermeneutic approach to the narrative, enabled their life story to be understood as one that is narrated yet also lived. Widdershoven (1993) suggests that we live our lives in such a way that enables us to tell stories of our experiences and actions. Further, in telling these stories we change the meanings of our experiences and actions. Life, therefore, is expressed, articulated, and modified in stories. Moreover, stories are interpretations of life in which the meaning of life is spelled out in much the same way as the meaning of a text is spelled out in a literary translation. Thus, from a hermeneutic viewpoint, the relationship between life and story can be determined as interpretative. A story interprets experiences; it connects meanings and makes them explicit. Further, Widdershoven (1993) argues that the intertwining of experience and story lies at the core of individual life and psychological understanding. The personal narratives of informant's, therefore, indicate a certain commonality

with the narratives of other's. The characteristics of the narrative appeared to be shared by all human beings.

As these theoretical concepts developed, considerations of the importance of the narrative in dementia gained in clarity. If the concept of narrative was common to other members of society, then any enabling of the retention of the life story permitted older people with dementia to occupy a more stable position in their environment. It gave identity and a sense of being for a time, even though the progressive ravages of this illness led to a lessening of this form of identity and to an eventual parting of our ways.

However, Gibson (1994) suggests that it is possible to put off this parting, this ending, by the use of therapeutic strategies. These strategies suggest a variety of methods which include reminiscence, life review, and life review counselling, The importance of a personal narrative in dementia cannot, therefore, be overestimated. During this investigation, I perceived the retention of a personal narrative as the retention of psychological life for these people. However, as their narratives faded from memory, I did not feel as if their psychological lives had ended. It was as if my knowledge of their story, in part, enabled this life to continue. Their narrative had gone, but the understanding remained. In some sense, this retention of understanding appeared to offer support for the continuing psychological existence of informants.

There is a steady increase in the therapeutic use of life recording methods for older people with, or without, dementia. However, most case notes of older people have a paucity of information on their

social history, a comment that has been made elsewhere (Gibson, 1994; Johnson, 1976; Mills and Chapman, 1992). Current research by Bornat (1994), together with Bornat and Adams (1992), indicate that the obtaining of a life-history of clients during assessments, gives a more accurate understanding of present needs and wishes, both in the community and in long stay settings. Any recording of the narrative at an early stage of the illness, would enable carers to have some knowledge of their client's meaningful past. Gibson (1994) suggests that carers in turn, can use client's life-histories to make sense of seemingly confused messages, and to remind/return this personal narrative to those in their care. This was an often successful strategy used during this investigation. I was frequently amazed when withdrawn and isolated informants suddenly recalled complex memories of the past after cues and prompts. Mr. Clerkenwell did this during our final interview. As did, Mr. Silverthorne, Mrs. Pinks and Mr. Biddley, at other times.

However, what appeared to empower recall more than any other strategy, was the strategy of addressing the emotional message given by the informants. This strategy did not always involve verbally identifying the emotions that were expressed. It was often just enough to listen and accept these emotional messages. This form of acceptance appeared to 'hold' and support most informants in their efforts to recall and disclose very deep concerns. This concept of the role of the interviewer as one who supported informant's recall and disclosure throughout the life of the investigation, will be more fully addressed later in this chapter. The findings suggest that not only was I able to encourage informants to tell their stories, but that I was also able to hold and support them as they began to lose the

ability to remember their story. The finding that all informants were able to recall their personal narrative, further indicated that this was a developing process. All informants experienced a diminishing or loss of of their narrative over the life of this investigation.

7.7 THE DISSOLUTION OF THE NARRATIVE IN DEMENTIA

At the commencement of the interviews, all informants were able to recall pieces of their personal past. Over time, these recollections cohered in to their life story, or narrative, which gave them a sense of narrative identity. However, the content of these recalled memories were not uniform for all informants, who were in different stages of the dementing process, and had differing levels of mental ability (see figure one, diagram showing cognitive test scores of informant's prior to commencement of investigation). Not all test scores fitted neatly on this scale. Mr. Clerkenwell's MMSE scores were given as 11/27. This can be read as scoring fractionally over the mid way point. However, it is still well below the cut off point of 23. Further, Mr. Rider's hospital notes do not give actual test results, but state that he was able to answer most questions correctly. It was decided to give him an approximate score of 8/10. Not all informants were cognitively tested at this time using the MTS, MMSE, or MSQ, as in the case of Mr. Biddley. However, his CT. scan had revealed fairly substantial changes and a definitive diagnosis of primary degenerative dementia had been given.

The cognitive powers of informants continued to show evidence of decline throughout the life of the investigation. The evidence for decline was supported, in part, by additional cognitive testing which

took place some time after initial diagnosis (see figure two, diagram showing available cognitive test scores of informants in latter stages of the investigation). However, not all informants were tested, neither did one MTS show this decline. Mrs. Pinks MTS did not change during the series of interviews, even though her diminishing recall of past events, prior to this final testing, indicated evidence of a greater cognitive impairment.

There was also additional difficulty in interpreting the MTS of Mrs. Woodley, who was tested in 1993. She was able to answer one question, in that she could recall her christian name and surname, but all other information appeared to have gone. However, her hospital notes indicated that the clinician abandoned the test after four questions, due to her difficult mood. In response to one query, Mrs. Woodley said, "That's a silly question." It was decided, therefore, to place her score on the lower end of the scale, as shown in figure two, slightly above point one.

Although there were no test scores available for Mr. Coxley, Mr. Rider, and Mr. Raft, their case-studies, too, indicated evidence of further cognitive decline. For some informants, this decline ended in death. Both Mr. Silverthorne and Mr. Clerkenwell died during the study. During 1994, Mr. Rider and Mr. Coxley also died. Of the remaining informants, Mrs. Woodley, Mrs. Pinks, Mr. Biddley, and Mr. Raft have much reduced mental functioning. It is likely that at the close of 1995, none of the remaining informants from this investigation will be alive.

The findings from this investigation indicate that the narrative of some informants ended prior to biological death. This was most clearly shown in the case-studies of Mr. Silverthorne, Mr. Biddley and Mr. Rider. The final interview with Mrs. Pinks showed that she retained little memory of the past. It was only with great difficulty that she managed to recall the name of her former employer. Further, the case-studies of Mrs. Woodley and Hugh Raft indicate that the content of their memories was diminishing. Mr. Clerkenwell, too, although able to surprise the interviewer with his account of further deprivations and atrocities experienced as a POW only a few months before his death, still indicated a loss of narrative and a partial loss of narrative identity. Finally, Mr. Coxley, although able to recall many of his former stories, had also begun to lose previously expressed detail and depth to these accounts. These findings are in marked contrast to the commencement of the study when all informants were able to recall their narrative and, thus, possessed a sense of narrative identity (see figure 3, integrity of narrative in informants at commencement of interviews).

With the decline of cognitive abilities came the dissolution of the narrative, although the latter appeared to decline more slowly. Figure 4, the extent of dissolution of narrative identity at conclusion of interviews, indicates that all informants experienced a reduction in their memories of past experiences and narrative identity. Figures three and four indicate the integrity of the narrative from two perspectives. On the right of the diagram is the fully developed and articulate narrative identity, on the left is the state of non verbal communication only. It is this inability to communicate, other than through largely non verbal methods, which is seen to be experienced

by many sufferers of this disease in its more severe form. The criteria for placing informants on one of the equidistant points of this scale were the intactness of their narrative identities at the beginning of the series of interviews and, again, on conclusion. The mid point is deemed to divide these two states of being. The placing of informant's names one over the other on this scale is not meant to suggest that one narrative is considered to be more intact than another, but rather follows the order of the presentation of the informants through this work, including the case-studies in appendix two.

Figure three suggests that, at the commencement of the interviews, Mr. Clerkenwell, Mr. Biddley, Mr. Coxley and Mr. Raft were considered to have a fully developed and articulate narrative identity. This is not to suggest that their narratives were fully intact, indeed there are obvious omissions in these accounts, but rather that their words and stories point to a more whole concept of selfhood.

Mr. Clerkenwell was not only able to relate many of his past experiences, he was also able to relate them to the present. Thus, he saw himself as influenced by past and present events. It is true that some earlier experiences seemed to be lost from memory, and it is probable that the cognitive impairment associated with his dementia was largely responsible for this. However, some of these 'forgotten' times were painful events. His first wife had committed suicide and he had no recollection of her at all, yet he was able to remember other painful memories, both past and present.

Mr. Biddley retained a strong sense of narrative identity for the early part of the investigation, although this was quickly overcome by the

onslaught of his rapidly progressive disease. However, it is considered that he, too, had a strong sense of selfhood. Mr. Biddley struggled to keep this intact through his ability to enjoy social interactions, especially the interactions within the interviews themselves.

Mr. Coxley, too, had a more complete narrative and, thus, a more intact sense of narrative identity at this stage. He was able to speak of his past and present experiences, and to have a sense of accomplishment over some of his achievements. Much of his earlier life, especially the grief occasioned by his mother's illness remained unresolved. However, he was able to speak of these times and to hold them in memory, although the pain at times was great. Mr. Raft, the final member of the group, told his story with some clarity, when viewed from his own perspective. He saw himself as a victim, as being misunderstood, and as feeling very unhappy. He was able to relate his fundamental emotions to these past experiences, and to those of the present.

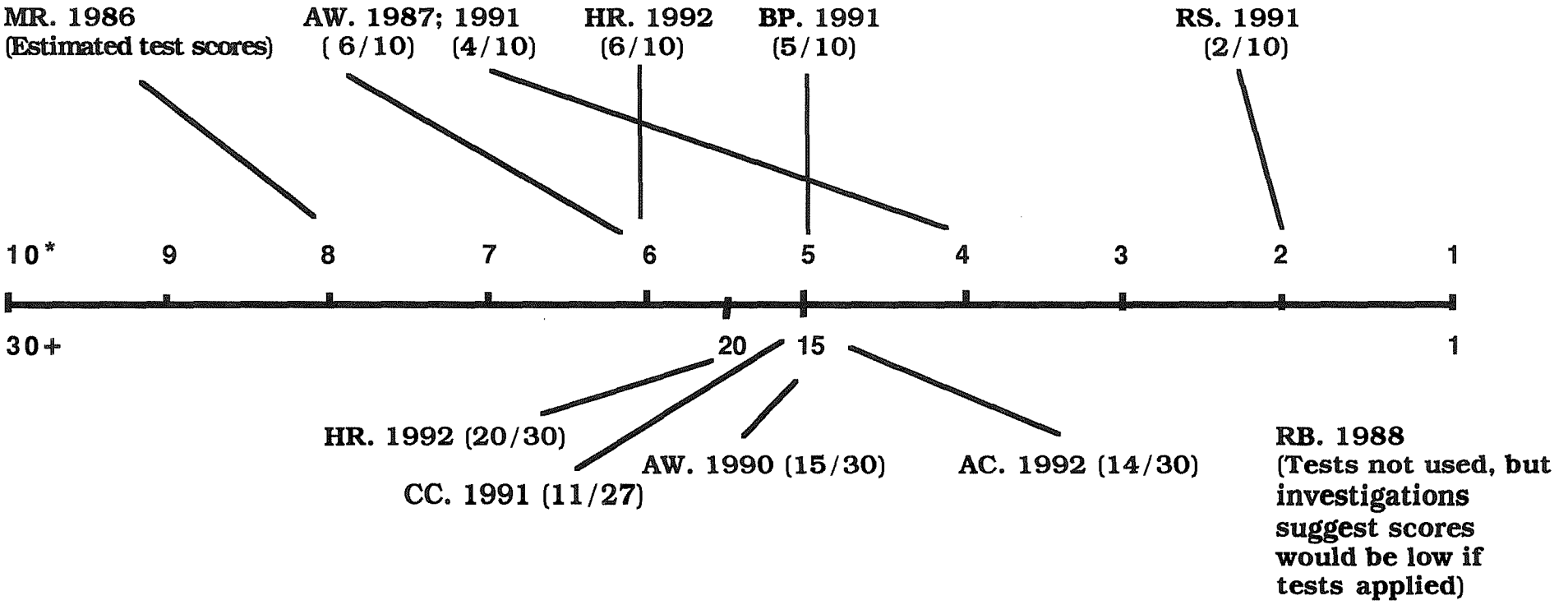
Consideration of the narratives of these four informants, suggests that they held a strong sense of narrative identity. All four were able to speak of various topics associated with the past and, in their own way, relate them to the present. When they told their stories, one had the impression that they were acting as an observer, which is a feature of memory reconstruction, and as a participant - the re-experiencing of the event under discussion. These facets of their narratives gave a certain strength and depth to their accounts. It did not seem as if they were recalling all of these memories by rote. Many of their stories appeared to be spontaneously recalled, and freshly examined.

The decision to place the narratives of Mrs. Woodley and Mrs. Pinks slightly beyond the mid way point between the centre of the scale and the state of having a more intact and developed narrative identity is, of course, open to criticism, as are all comments made throughout this particular section. These two informants both had stories to tell and, indeed, the interviews with Mrs. Woodley suggest that the central core of her narrative consisted of the intact memories of her unhappy relationship with her mother. They were intact in the sense that the emotions associated with this relationship were strong, powerful, and readily available for recall.

However, both Mrs. Woodley and Mrs. Pinks had a less fluid narrative than the previous four informants. Many of their memories were more fragmented and overlearned. Mrs. Pinks could recall her days at the vicarage and driving her Trojan car, but the repetitious, and perhaps obsessive, nature of these accounts did suggest that these memories were 'fixed' and well established. However, as she recounted more of these times more pieces of her story gradually emerged.

Both Mr. Silverthorne and Mr. Rider are placed at a point slightly over mid way between the centre of the scale and the furthest point, which indicates that informants are capable of non verbal communication only. Even at commencement of the interviews the data suggest that that these two informants found it difficult to retain a sense of narrative identity. Both were frequently overwhelmed by feelings of loss and abandonment in the setting, suggesting that the integrity of their respective narrative identities was in a fairly advanced state of dissolution

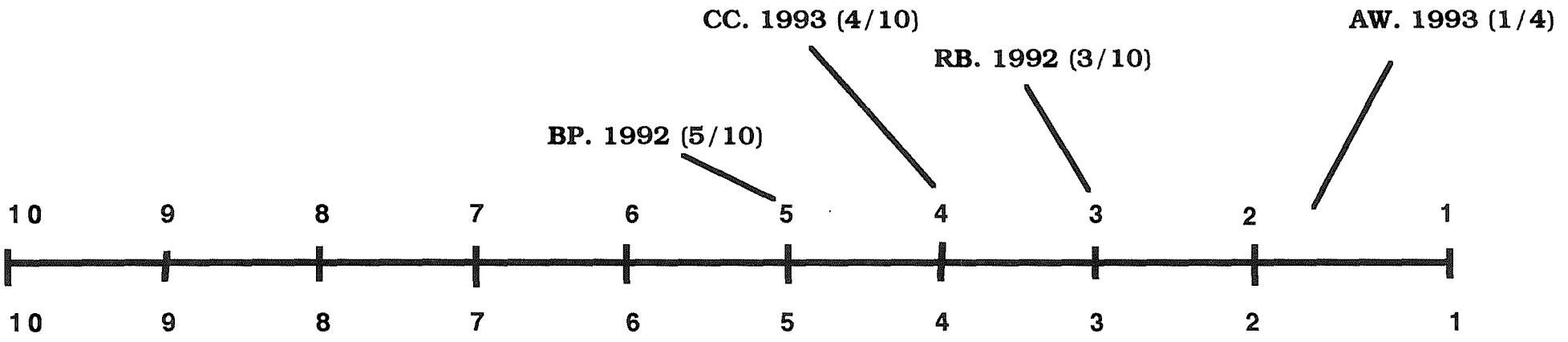
FIG. 1
DIAGRAM SHOWING COGNITIVE TEST SCORES OF INFORMANT'S PRIOR TO COMMENCEMENT OF INTERVIEWS



* MSQ/MENTAL TEST SCORE

\+ MMSE

FIG. 2
DIAGRAM SHOWING COGNITIVE TEST SCORES OF INFORMANT'S IN LATTER STAGES OF THE INVESTIGATION



AC. 1993 (No test score, but only minor changes apparent)

RS. 1993 (Died)

MR. 1993 (No test available, unable to speak)

HR. 1993 (No test available, but mental status much reduced)

FIGURE THREE
INTEGRITY OF NARRATIVE IDENTITY IN INFORMANTS
AT COMMENCEMENT OF INTERVIEWS

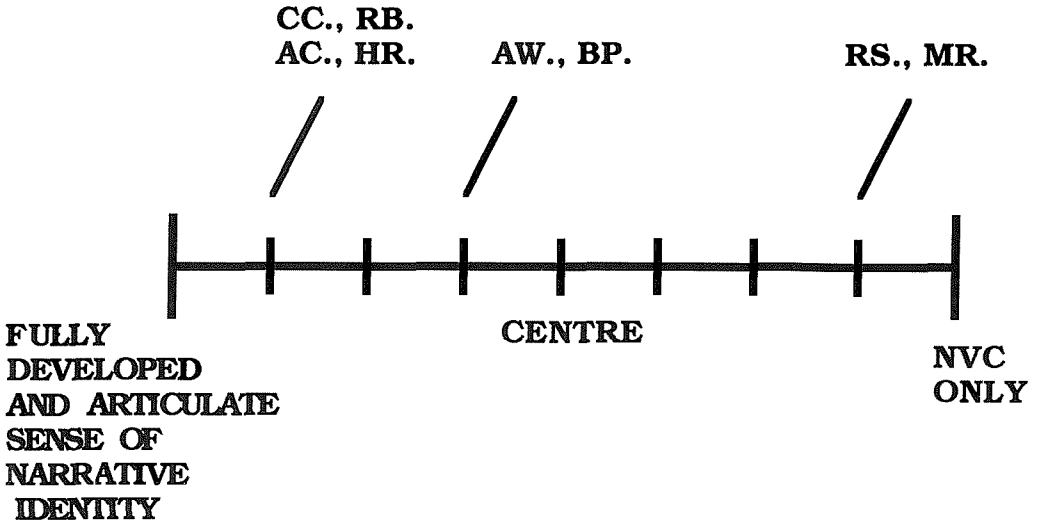
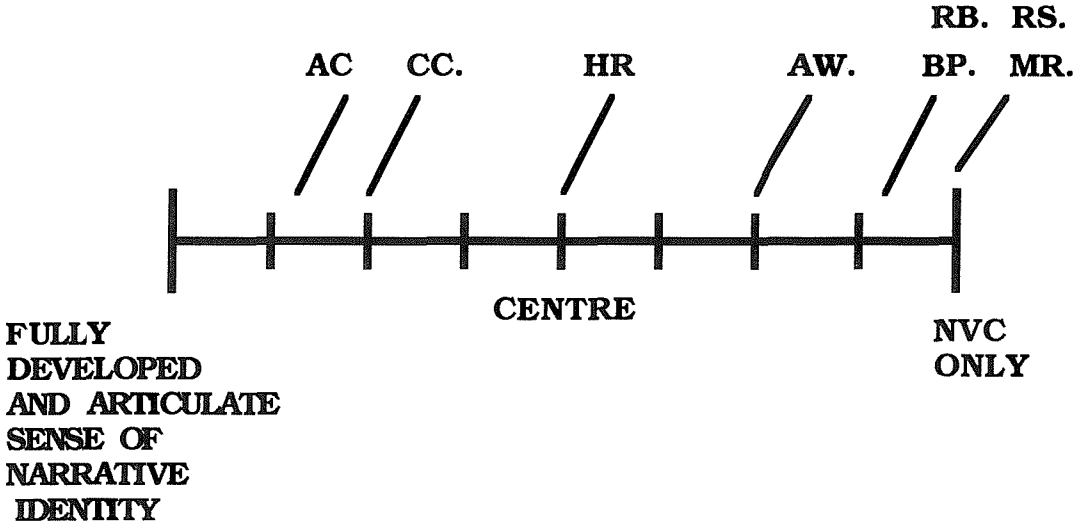


FIGURE FOUR
THE EXTENT OF DISSOLUTION OF NARRATIVE IDENTITY AT
CONCLUSION OF INTERVIEWS



Possible Effects of Change on Informants Narrative Identity

This discussion of the integrity of the narrative identity of informants at the commencement of the interviews does indicate that some informants had a less intact personal narrative than others. There are many variables that play their part in this finding. All informants were affected in different ways by the dementing process. Further, as is indicated in the discussion of dementia in chapter two of this work, dementia presents differently in different individuals. All that can be said of this illness relating to memory, is that the dissolution of memory is a feature of this disease. Individual decline in memory, however, is variable

Other considerations that have great bearing on the recall of the narrative are the changes that occurred in the lives of some of the informants. Some informants did experience change quite early on in the investigation. Mr. Biddley had experienced a recent change in residence just prior to the commencement of the study. He had moved to long term residential care. Mr. Raft, too, had experienced change. He had only recently joined the setting. Yet another informant, Mr. Rider, was experiencing change continually as he began to be unable to locate himself in the present and desperately longed for the familiar and loved face of his wife and their home.

Another major consideration in a discussion of the memories of informant's was the drugs regime which was part of their lives. As is mentioned in chapter four of this work, all informants were on some type of medication which was frequently changed throughout the life of the investigation. It was decided not to dwell too heavily on this

aspect of patient care which is applicable to most sufferers of dementia, but it must be acknowledged that the psychotropic drugs used in dementia care will have an effect on mood and recall. It is a tribute to the strength and durability of the narrative of informants, that none of these considerations completely overshadowed their ability to recall their emotional stories and experiences.

The Extent of Dissolution of Narrative Identity at the Conclusion of the Interviews

At the conclusion of the interviews, figure four gives some indication of the changes that had taken place in the ability of informants to recall their story. As memory further declined, the ability to recall the past faded. For some informants, such as Mr. Silverthorne and Mr. Rider, it had gone completely. For Mr. Biddley and Mrs. Pinks, their narratives remained as shadows of former substance. Their final interviews show this with some clarity. Mrs. Pinks was seen between April 1992 and August 1993. Early interviews indicated that she was able to recall the the vicarage where she first worked, the vicar and his wife, the car she drove for them, and some details of her immediate kin. This was not the case in August 1993 when we met for our final interview together.

Prior to asking her about topics from her past, I explained that I had been to see her many times before, but I had not seen her for a long time. I told her she used to talk to me of her past life and it was very interesting. She smiled. I gently led her into a discussion of major themes that had emerged during the investigation.

Int. Do you remember much about when you were younger?

BP. Not much really.....

Int. Not much? A bit of a blur is it?

BP. Mm?

Int. A bit of a blur?

BP. Yes.

Int. What about when you were at the rectory? Do remember that?

BP. Oh yes.....That's wrong. It .....long time.....

Int. Mm! You worked there a long time.....

BP. Mm.....Yes I did.....

Int. Do you remember the name of the vicar?

BP. Yes!

Int. What was his name?

BP. .....Dear.... Don't remember.....

Int. You drove their car didn't you?

BP. Er, William.....

Int. William?

BP. William Rom.....Ney....

Int. William Romney..Yes....

BP. Yes....

Int. And you drove their car...

BP. Yes.

Int. What sort of car was that?

BP. .....Now.....

Int. You were very proud you drove the car, weren't you?

BP. Mm.....

Int. Do you remember what colour it was?

BP. Singer....A Singer.....

Int. I thought it was a Trojan...A Trojan car.....you drove for them.....

BP. We had a Trojan....

Int. Yes. The Romneys had a Trojan car...A blue one...

BP. Yes...

Int. And you drove it....You told me it had got very hard wheels....Solid tyres.

BP. Solid tyres!

Int. Yes. A bit of a devil when it was frosty and icy

BP. Yes....Yes...

Int. You've done everything haven't you?

BP. *(BP. gave a little laugh).* Yes...

Int. Driven the car....And you worked...You got friendly with a maid, didn't you, at the..Rectory...

BP. Yes.

Int. What was her name?

BP. ..... Can't remember.....

Int. Is it Mabel?

BP. .....Can't remember what name was....

Int. You worked at the rectory before you left school didn't you?

BP. Mm?

Int. Worked hard...

BP. Yes, indeed.....

Int. Did a bit of everything

BP. Mm.....

Int. Including driving the car...

BP. Mm.....Yes indeed..... I stepped in a few jobs.

Int. You stepped into that before you left school didn't you?

(Pause to allow BP time to answer). **Because your mum was widow wasn't she? .....*(Pause to allow BP time to answer).* Was it two brothers you had? *(Pause to allow BP time to answer).***

BP. Mm?

Int. Was it two brothers you had?

BP. .....No I don't think so....

Int. You don't....But you remember the rectory?

BP. Yes

Int. A big place....

BP. Yes.

Int. And you kept it clean *(Pause)*..Do you remember going abroad with your husband?

BP. Mm..

Int. Because you liked the sunshine didn't you? *(Pause)*.... And the South of France?

Mrs. Pinks finally dropped off to sleep, or perhaps pretended to do so. Her voice was very faint and quavery throughout this interview. The above conversation gives some indication of the extent of the dissolution of her narrative. It was only with great difficulty that she recalled the Trojan car, the name of the vicar, and the rectory. She did not recall that she had two brothers, neither did she remember the name of the maid who had been so influential in her early life. She did, however, recall that it was a long time ago. Further, information from the setting suggests that these memories were not stimulated through simple reminiscence. It is possible that the use of this intervention may have helped to encourage recall for a longer period.

Mr. Biddley, too, showed a marked dissolution of his personal narrative. His dementia had rapidly progressed and he seemed more cognitively impaired than Mrs. Pinks. Indeed, figure two gives some support for this argument. Mr. Biddley was seen for a similar period to that of Mrs. Pinks. He was interviewed between May 1992 and August 1993. I went to see him for a final interview, after an absence of some months, in order to see if any fragments of his past stories remained in memory. This visit was very short. He was actually fast asleep when I arrived at the setting. The staff reported that Mr. Biddley still continually wandered the corridors. He looked very frail and much older, although the sister in charge said he was now much better than he was. She reported that his behaviour was much as before. He said very little, and continued to pace the corridors almost unceasingly.

All the staff in the setting displayed much compassion and concern for him. A member of staff lightly touched Mr. Biddley's arm, and told him he had a visitor. He immediately rose and walked across the room into the corridor. I accompanied him along the corridors, and gently led him into a discussion of past major themes:

Int. Do you remember when you worked for British Rail?

RB. Yes.

Int. You do? Was that a good job?.....*(Pause).* Was that a good job working for British Rail?.....*(RB. did not reply)*... Do you remember looking after your mum?

RB. Mmm!

Int. Was her name Violet?....Was her name Violet? *(RB. nodded)*.....You looked after your mum for a long

time.....*(RB. made no reply, he just kept trudging along the corridors).* But you remember working for British Rail?

RB. Yes.

Int. A good job.....*(RB. did not answer. He continued to pace the corridors).*

The quick relentless sound of Mr. Biddley's feet pacing the corridors occupied much of the tape of this interview. He was exhausted. I led him into the dining room and sat him down for his lunch, whereupon he immediately got up again.

The final interview would appear to indicate that, as with other informants, only the faintest trace of Mr. Biddley's stories remained. he appeared to have a faint recollection of his mother and, possibly, British Rail. However, this is speculative and his replies may have been influenced by the questions asked. What is apparent, however, is that this final interview shows the extent of the dissolution of his personal narrative and his sense of narrative identity.

The data from other informants, too, suggest a loss of narrative identity. Mrs. Woodley's final recorded interview, although indicating a certain sense of resolution and calm, did not contain the content, or the depth, of earlier meetings. This was also applicable to Mr. Raft. Although the final meeting with this informant was unrecorded, ethnographic observation and notes suggest that he, too, possessed this measure of calm and tranquillity although many of his former memories were no longer available for recall.

Mr. Clerkenwell was, perhaps, the most surprising member of the sample. The final recorded interview with this informant unleashed a flood of past memories. These memories, however, were all concerned with loss, grief, abandonment, and cruelty. There is a recognised link between memory and mood in mood congruent memories (Baddeley, 1990; Blaney,1986; Bower, 1981) and some evidence of the link between memory and mood in dementia (Mills and Walker, 1994). Mr. Clerkenwell gave evidence to support this theory in the recall of his POW memories and, to a lesser extent, of his father 'running away'. His life at this time may have encouraged the fundamental emotions of sadness, anger, disgust and fear and, thus, encouraged the recall of past experiences which were associated with similar emotions.

The final interview with Mr. Coxley was, again, unrecorded, but it is noted in his case-study that his recall of a personal past, although largely unchanged, had diminished in content and depth. His narrative, too, showed evidence of the beginning of dissolution.

Discussion

Consideration of the final interviews and observations of all informant's indicate that all informants suffered a loss of their personal narrative, to a greater or lesser extent, That this loss was linked to their failing memories is undeniable, however influenced by changes in personal circumstances and general ill health. Moreover, this was observed of other people in the setting. It will be recalled that the pilot study for this investigation took place in the long stay ward of the setting. Further, I was a frequent visitor to this ward during the times that informants stayed there for respite care. I,

therefore, had the opportunity to observe other patients in the setting. Some of these patients had been there for several years. They had also attended the day hospital.

As is noted in chapter three of this work, during my visits to the setting I would frequently speak to these 'non informants'. I also noticed their interactions with others. Mrs. Hopper was one such person. She was a tall slim lady with a commanding presence, given to wearing colourful tracksuits. At the beginning of the investigation I would quite often see her walking purposefully around either settings, talking to staff and visitors alike. She would also try to talk to other patients. I spoke to her on a number of occasions. She was very sad and often in tears because she wanted to go home to her family. She would talk about them in a fragmented but obviously recalled manner. I saw Mrs. Hopper again fairly recently. She was sitting in an armchair in the main lounge of the ward, looking vacantly into space. I spoke to her but she did not reply. However, she was not showing signs of her previous anxiety and unhappiness. It may be argued that this was due to the process of dementia and/or possibly the medication she was taking. It is probable that her loss of unhappiness and anxiety is a combination of all such variables.

Yet another visitor to both settings, Mr. Axwell, did not display unhappiness. Indeed, rather the reverse. He showed signs of great happiness and contentment. I saw him very recently during a visit to the day hospital. He was standing in the corridor with his trousers rolled up below his knees. He smiled at me sweetly as I approached. I had forgotten his first name and he could not remember it. I asked one of the staff who was passing by, and he told me that Mr. Axwell's

first name was Archie. Mr. Axwell again smiled and said with great unconcern. " That's right." I told him he looked happy, and asked if he felt happy? He said he did. These observations, together with evidence from the staff in the setting would appear to support his feelings of well-being. This evidence of loss of anxiety/personal unhappiness is also evident in the findings from this study. Not all informants showed signs of grief as their narrative approached dissolution. Mr. Silverthorne was one such person. Some of the final meetings with this informant suggest that he was content and free from his previous anxieties. Neither did Mrs. Pinks or Mr. Biddley show signs of great unhappiness, rather it is the unhappiness experienced by the interviewer which is evident in the final interviews with these two informants.

On a more personal level, within my own residential unit there are residents who have experienced the loss of their personal narrative. Two such residents are in the latter stages of the dementing process and have experienced a total loss. One cannot speak and the other has a very few moments when her speech is comprehensible. They are in need of total care. Yet these residents give every indication of experiencing states of well-being. Mrs. Lodge, the lesser impaired of the two, will tell carers that she loves them and hugs her soft cuddly toy given to her by her daughter. If she is noisy, she becomes calmer when staff speak to her and gently stroke her face, or hold her hand. She appears to listen when they are speaking. The sound of gentle voices appear to give her pleasure. Mrs. Lodge has been living with us for five years.

The other of these two residents, Mrs. Corner, has been a resident in

the Home for nine years. She is a tiny lady who sits in her chair, constantly moving her head and arms, whilst chuckling and laughing to herself. She loves the experience of touch, and will stroke silky smooth material, or furry fabric, with signs of great enjoyment and pleasure. However, it must be said that these two ladies are greatly loved by the staff who supervise all aspects of their care. It is rare that I will find any aspect of their care less than excellent. Moreover, many of the staff have been there for many years.The deputy has been in position for thirteen years, the cook and another senior carer for twelve years. The total number of years of service for twenty two staff add up to over a hundred. Thus most carers have had a long relationship with these two residents. Further, staff knew them when they were less incapacitated, and they are aware of their previous history and preferences. In this sense, the personal narrative of each of these residents has been retained and held by those who care for them .

A further nine residents, who are in a state of narrative dissolution due to the dementing process, also exhibit signs of well-being, albeit to varying degrees. Again, many have been with us for some years and their personal narratives are retained by those who care for them. I am able, therefore, to recall parts of their narratives as I write these words without recourse to their personal records. I know that one of the nine kept a corner shop for seventy three years, where she sold her highly popular home made faggots. She always had a soft spot for 'our boys' who were on leave during the second world war. She would give them little treats from her stock of sweets and cigarettes. She also assiduously collected items for Red Cross parcels.

Another lady aged ninety five years of age, cared for her blind husband with great devotion. They had no children, which was a source of great anguish for them both. Yet another lady was a professional actress and I know the London theatres where she appeared and the parts she played. I also know of the Guernsey tea shop which she and her husband kept after retirement, and the many hundreds of scones she made each day for visitors to the island. She remembers to this day how much she disliked doing this. This particular resident has also allowed me to have a glimpse of what helps the dementia sufferer to achieve well-being in dementia. 'Things don't matter." she said. "People matter, and good kindness. We're very lucky. This place is full of good kindness".

As with other practitioners, it is probable that I could give quite a full account of these resident's personal narrative from memory alone. This is due to the many times that we have discussed their past lives and emotional experiences. Further, I am able to feed parts of their stories back to them to encourage recall. They are frequently amazed at the strength of my memory!

If these people live long enough they will, most probably, eventually experience a total dissolution of narrative, and the corresponding loss of narrative identity, prior to death. The retention of their narrative by others enables the final stages of the dementing process to be endured. It gives carers respect and understanding of the needs, emotions and behaviours of dementia sufferers, which is so necessary in dementia care work. This understanding enables the maintenance of personhood , which is, essentially, the relationships that all human beings have with others (Kitwood & Bredin, 1992).

The new culture of dementia care is devoted to the preservation of personhood in dementia, whereby the sufferer's uniqueness of being is validated, respected, and treated with 'good kindness' until the end. Through the maintenance of personhood, it is possible to achieve well-being. The loss of the ego does not automatically bring devastation and despair. Good carers are able to preserve personhood in others by their remarkable knowledge and skills which are such a fundamental part of dementia care work. The loss of the personal narrative and loss of narrative identity might not be the tragedy that we, who are non dementing, might suppose. This is not to say that carers should not seek to maintain the personal narratives for dementia sufferers for as long as is practicably possible, but to recognise that dementia has its own agenda, which will involve further cognitive decline. Whatever the therapies, whatever the interventions, and no matter how skilful carers may be, narrative identity in dementia will eventually disappear. It is at this point that the ongoing and underlying work of the maintenance of personhood assumes a clarity of purpose, and a recognition of its importance in dementia care

Considerations of the Role of the Interviewer During the Investigation

Throughout the series of interviews with each of the informants, it is possible to describe the role of the interviewer as that of a friend. Certainly, many informants saw me in that light. Occasionally some seemed to think that I had some authority, and that I was attached to the medical/social work team in the hospital. Mr. Biddley indicated that he saw me as having knowledge of the decision making

process in the setting. Mr. Rider felt that I had the authority to release him from the confines of the secure ward and Mr. Raft thought I was something to do with the 'Welfare'. Nonetheless, overall I was seen as more of a friend than an interviewer, researcher, or counsellor.

However, the informant's case-studies indicate that my role was therapeutic in that all informants experienced increased levels of well-being. Further, I knew most of the informants well and our relationship lasted for a long period of time. In chapter three of this work it is stated that I rarely felt as if I was dictating the pace, or content, of the interviews, rather this was done by the informants themselves. Further, I felt as if I was accompanying them on a journey, but I was not allowed to know the final destination. My role, therefore, might be perceived as that of a companion and therapist in the exploration of their narratives. However, for some informants I was also a companion and therapist as they moved into the final stage of dementia. This incorporated a facilitating role of 'holding' and sustaining the personhood of informants as they sustained further losses associated with the dementing process.

The role of the 'other' in dementia care work is crucial to the well-being of demented elderly people. Much of the literature on this topic has focussed on the practicalities of this work. Moreover, most theoretical inquiries concerned with in-depth study of well-being in older people with dementia have, perforce, used small samples. This investigation was no different. The sample under discussion was small, but the extensive data collected over an extended timespan gives support for the theoretical arguments concerned with the

importance of a facilitating other, in all aspects of dementia care work.

7.8 CONCLUSION

As the many threads of this investigation are finally woven into a more complete whole, it is possible to see, with some clarity, the intertwining of the complex phenomena of emotion and memory in dementia. Theoretical considerations give some understanding of the immense strength of the emotions, and their role as underpinning variables in aspects of human behaviour.

Although there is a paucity of literature concerning the relationship between emotion, memory and dementia, other disciplines have recognised the individual importance of these phenomena. Studies on emotion are numerous (Thompson 1988), and within cognitive psychology there is a recognised link between emotion and cognition (Baddeley, 1990; Izard, 1991; Lazarus 1991; Leventhal, 1984). This study has sought to develop this relationship by positing an interdependency between memory and emotion. Further, the characteristics of emotion and duration of memories, which are associated with autobiographical memory (Conway 1990), imply a relationship between emotion and available long term memories in older people with dementia (Mills and Coleman, 1994; Mills and Walker, 1994)).

Although present knowledge of brain structures and processes are incomplete, the emotions appear to have a profound effect on memory in dementia. Further, a certain strength and durability is

indicated in the emotional autobiographical memories of informant's that was not apparent in other aspects of memory. Theorists suggest that there is memory dysfunction prior to mood changes (Bayles, 1991; Lishman, 1978; Merriam et al, 1988; Reisberg, 1983). However, memory is typically classified as either short term or long term, rather than specific types of memories. Reisberg (1983) suggests that emotional changes are more typical of the latter stages of dementia, and are associated with severe cognitive impairment. This was a finding from this investigation. Memory appeared to decline more quickly than the emotions, and the emotional responses, of informants.

Autobiographical memories are also concerned with memories of the self (Brewer, 1986). It has been argued that life histories (Thompson 1988), some types of reminiscence (Bender, 1994; Butler, 1963; Coleman, 1994) and psychotherapeutic interviews (Garland, 1994; Knight, 1986b) are also concerned with emotional memories of the self. Other theorists and practitioners have also made this claim for sufferers of dementia. Thus Gibson (1994) finds emotions displayed in the recall of life histories, together with reminiscence work. Further, Hausman (1991), and Sinason (1991) write convincingly of the emotional agenda present in psychotherapeutic work with this client group. Thus, emotion and memory appear to converge in the recall of a personal past. It is suggested that this association is made evident, within this investigation, by the recall of an emotional personal past, or narrative, by all informants.

It is argued, therefore, that the phenomena of dementia, memory and emotion have a common meeting place, both theoretically and

therapeutically, within the recall of the personal narrative for sufferers of dementia. It is the concept of narrative that links the theoretical and therapeutic aspects of this study. A major finding of this work is that informants, all of whom were at various stages of the dementing process, were still able to recall their narrative. Funkenstein (1993) suggests that memory and narrative are inextricably linked. The disappearance of the narrative is the disappearance of narrative identity. However, the narrative is dependent on existing memory structures and processes. This suggests a second major finding of this work. As memory structures and processes weaken, through the progressive nature of dementia, the narrative dissolves and fades into oblivion. Narrative identity is lost. At the conclusion of the investigation all informants had suffered a marked loss of narrative identity. For some informants, it had disappeared entirely.

This, it is argued, is not the final ending of the psychological life of sufferers of dementia. Their biological and psychological life continues. A natural and logical consequence to the loss of the narrative identity is that future work with older people who have dementia must then be concerned with the maintenance and preservation of personhood. It is this continuing psychological task which is at the heart of dementia care. However, the various strategies which facilitate this work would benefit from a knowledge of the personal narrative of sufferers of dementia. It is argued that the sharing of such a narrative, within dementia care, reinforces carer attitudes of respect, understanding and acceptance. In this sense, therefore, the personal narrative of dementia sufferers is never lost. It continues its existence in the form of a treasure which is

bestowed on others to use how they will. It is hoped that the discovery of the presence of the narrative in dementia, made possible by the generosity of the informants, will be instrumental in enriching the lives of other sufferers of dementia. This would be a reward and a source of joy to all informants who took part in this investigation.

APPENDIX ONE

RECOMMENDATIONS FOR FUTURE RESEARCH

(i) Further Replications of this Study

The outcomes of this investigation are encouraging, but the number of informants involved was not substantial. It is recommended that this type of investigation should be repeated in order to ascertain the significance of outcomes and to evaluate theory.

(ii) Suggested Changes in the Management of Service Provision for Sufferers of Dementia and Their Families.

Further investigations may indicate therapeutic benefits for other older people with dementia. This would suggest that some dementia care settings, such as an NHS psychogeriatric day hospital, would benefit from the services of a psychologist with psychotherapeutic skills. The nature of the client group suggests that the delivery of this service might be best accomplished by a psychologist with this background, who might also serve the community, and be available to meet the needs of some relatives who find it difficult to criticise/cope with existing support networks. However, this type of service provision would be deemed highly expensive in these economically stringent times. Further, such skilled people are a relatively rare resource. A more realistic goal would be to incorporate more rigorous interpersonal skill training as part of nurse and social worker courses, possibly through post qualifying training for those wishing to specialise in this area of work.

Although informants were seen on a fairly regular basis, there were often intervals of two to three weeks between the interviews. Following the establishment of the initial relationship, clients could probably be seen at these intervals. This investigation indicated that most informants found the process to be beneficial, even after a lapse of some weeks. Thus, only one therapist would be required for a pilot study, or the full time provision of such as service. Ideally, there should be no change in the therapist during the course of treatment.

It is recommended, therefore, that a pilot study should take place, using a an NHS dementia day care setting and a psychologist with psychotherapeutic training. Outcomes should be evaluated from managerial hospital staff, nursing staff, clients and relatives perspectives.

(iii) Studies of Personality Types of Dementia Sufferers

This investigation would suggest that that it is possible to mitigate the malignant social psychology of this disease, albeit for a time, and to effect some positive change in personality. However, current research in personality changes in dementia by Siegler et al (1991) and Williams et al (1994) among others, indicates that negative personality change tends to be more frequent. It is suggested, therefore, that a replication of this study should take place over a six months period, in order to rate possible positive personality changes in informants, that may be attributable to the kind of therapeutic interventions used during this current study. Investigations into ratings of personality traits pre-test and post-test, would use the

NEO Personality Inventory, together with other measures of personality, and informants own comments in semi-structured interviews.

(iv) Studies of Premorbid Personality Traits of Dementia Sufferers

Of great interest, is the unproven suspicion among practitioners that some premorbid personality traits incline older individuals towards the state of dementia. Some of the informants in this present investigation described themselves as life time worriers, anxious to avoid causing trouble, and/or perfectionists. This was confirmed by their primary carers and staff in the setting. This is also true of past and present residents in my own setting. Therefore, research into premorbid personality traits of older people with dementia would seem to be appropriate.

Several possible links between personality and disease outcomes have been suggested by Friedman and Booth-Kewley (1987) and Totman, (1990) among others. Further, many methodologists have argued strongly for a trait taxonomy in the study of health and disease. Of some interest is Temoshok's (1985) proposed Type C behavioural pattern which reflects an inability to express emotion, particularly negative emotion, in an open fashion. Equally, other posited contributing factors to ill health should be considered in such studies of the personality. Rodin (1986) argues that the presence or absence of control, has significant influence on an individual's emotive, cognitive and physical well-being. Further, theorists such as Cohen (1984) and Totman (1990) suggest that the the ability to

cope/manage stress has an important influence on health.

Although studies of the premorbid personalities of dementia sufferers would create many methodological problems for the researcher, it is suggested that this is an area worthy of further investigation. Again, it would be appropriate to use community based services for dementia care in order to involve agency staff, clients and relatives in data collection. The use of appropriate personality tests would enable clients, carers and/or relatives to take part. Significant commonalities in the personalities of the sample may perhaps indicate some possible link between personality, life experiences, and dementia. This tentative hypothesis would require extensive investigation in order to establish any possible significance, and to evaluate proposed theoretical considerations.

(v) Suggested Preventative Treatment for Older People Undergoing Life Crises.

Some informants from this study had undergone life experiences which led to states of ill-being. For some informants, the experience of disclosing these painful experiences to another person was therapeutic. Currently, mental health care for older people is not seen as a priority in the promotion of health care. However, the provision of counselling services for older members of our society may prove helpful and necessary for some elderly people.

It is suggested, therefore, that a pilot study be undertaken to ascertain possible outcomes of the provision of such as service. An appropriate setting might be a general practitioner's surgery with a

significantly large proportion of elderly patients. Following necessary permissions, all patients aged 70+ years would be surveyed, using a postal questionnaire. The questionnaire would seek to establish patients views on the provision and usefulness of a counselling service for older people. Analysis of the replies may indicate a need for such a service. Further considerations may indicate other areas of exploration.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Adams, J. (1984)

Reminiscence in the Geriatric Ward:an undervalued resource. Oral History Journal 12: 54-59

Adams, J. (1986)

Anamnesis in Dementia: restoring a personal history. Geriatric Nursing Sep/Oct. 1986 25-27

Agar, M. & Hobb, J.R. (1982)

Interpreting Discourse: coherence and the analysis of ethnographic interviews. Discourse Processes. 5:1-32

Allport, G. W. (1937)

Personality: a psychological interpretation. New York: Holt, Rinehart and Wilson

Annerstedt, A., Alfredson, B., & Risberg, G. (1987)

Effects of an Alternative Mode of Care for Demented Elderly. Paper presented at the 111rd. Congress of the International Psychogeriatric Association, Chicago

Averill, J. R. (1986)

Acquisition of Emotions during Adulthood in R. Harre (ed) The Social Construction of Emotions. New York, Oxford: Basil Blackwell.

Baddeley, A. (1990)

Human Memory: Theory and Practice

Hillsdale: Lawrence Erlbaum Associates

Baddeley, A. (1992)

Is Working Memory Working? The Fifteenth Bartlett Lecture. The Quarterly Journal of Experimental Psychology. 44(1): 1-31.

Bartlett, F. C. (1932)

Remembering

Cambridge: Cambridge University Press

Bayles, K. A. (1991)

Alzheimer's Disease Symptoms: prevalence and order of appearance

Journal of Applied Gerontology 10(4): 419-430

Bayles, K. A., & Kaszniak, A. W. (1987)

Communication and Cognition in Normal Ageing and Dementia. Boston: Little, Brown

Behar, R. (1993)

Translated Women: crossing the border with Esperanza's story. Boston: Beacon

Bender, M. P. (1994)

An Interesting Confusion: what can we do with reminiscence groupwork? in J. Bornat (ed). Reminiscence Reviewed: perspectives, evaluations, achievements.
Philadephia, Buckingham: Open University Press

Berg, B. L. (1989)

Qualitative Research Methods for the Social Sciences. Boston: Alyn and Bacon

Billings, A.G., & Moos, R.H. (1981)

The Role of Coping Responses and Social Resources in Attenuating the Stress of Life Events.
Journal of Behavioural Medicine 4: 139-157

Bingham, W. V. D., & Moore, B. V. (1959)

How to Interview 4th ed.
New York: Harper and Row

Blaney, P.H. (1986)

Affect and Memory: a review
Psychological Bulletin. 99: 229-246

Bond, J., Briggs, R., & Coleman, P. G. (1990).

The Study of Ageing in J. Bond & P.Coleman (eds.) Ageing and Society :an introduction to social gerontology. London,Newbury Park, New Delhi: Sage Publications

Bornat, J. (1985)

Exploring Living Memory:The Uses of Reminiscence. Ageing and Society 5: 333-337

Bornat, J. (1994)

Introduction **in J.Bornat (ed).** Reminiscence Reviewed:perspectives, evaluations achievements, Buckingham, Philadelphia: Open University Press

Bornat, J., & Adams, J (1992)

Models of Biography and Reminiscence in the Nursing Care of Frail Elderly People. in J. M. Via & E. Portella (eds). Proceedings of the 4th International Conference on Systems Science in Health-Social Services for the Elderly and Disabled. Vol.11 Barcelona: A. Camps

Bower, G. H. (1981)

On Mood and Memory American Psychologist. 36: 129-148

Bower, G. H., & Cohen, P. R. (1982)

Emotional Influences in Memory and Thinking: data and theory. In M. S. Clark, & S. T. Fiske, (eds). Affect and Cognition. Hillsdale NJ: Lawrence Erlbaum Associates.

Bower, G. H., Gilligan, S. G., & Monteiro, K. P. (1981)

Selectivity of Learning Caused by Affective States
Journal of Experimental Psychology [Gen].
110: 451-473.

Brewer, W. F. (1986)

What is Autobiographical Memory ? in D. C.
Rubin (ed). Autobiographical Memory,
Cambridge: Cambridge University Press

Bromley, D. B. (1966)

The Psychology of Human Ageing
Harmondsworth, New York, Victoria,
Ontario: Penguin

Bromley, D. B. (1986)

The Case-Study Method in Pschology and Related
Disciplines
Chichester: John Wiley

Bromley, D.B. (1990).

Behavioural Gerontology: Central Issues in the
Psychology of Ageing. Chichester:
John Wiley & Sons

Bruner, E. M. (1986)

Experience and its Expressions in V. W. Turner & E.
M. Bruner (eds). The Anthropology of Experience
Urbana, IL: University of Illinois Press

Buck, R. (1988)

Human Motivation and Emotion
(2nd edition) New York: John Wiley and Sons.

Busfield, J. (1986)

Managing Madness: Changing Ideas and Practice
London, Sydney, Auckland, Johannesburg:Hutchinson

Butler, R.N. (1963)

The Life Review: an interpretation of reminiscence
in the aged. Psychiatry 26: 65-76

Butler, R.N., & Lewis, M. I. (1982)

Ageing and Mental Health: positive psychosocial and
biomedical approaches. St.Louis: Mosby

Campbell, D.T. (1975)

'Degrees of Freedom' and the Case-Study
Comparative Political Studies 8:178-193

Cannon, W.B. (1927)

The James-Lange Theory of Emotion:a critical
examination and an alternative theory.
American Journal of Psychology (1): 106-124.

Carlson, C. M. (1984)

Reminiscing: toward achieving ego integrity in old age
Social Casework: The Journal of
Contemporary Social Work Feb.1984: 81-89

Castelnuovo-Tedesco, P. (1978)

The Mind as a Stage: Some Comments on Reminiscence and Internal Objects International Journal of Psychoanalysis. 59: 19-25

Chernitz, W.C. (1986)

The Informal Interview in W. C. Chernitz & J. M. Swanson (eds). From Practice to Grounded Theory: Qualitative Research in Nursing. Menlo Park CA: Addison Wesley

Chertkow, H. & Bub, D. (1990)

Semantic Memory Loss in Dementia of the Alzheimer's Type: what do various measures measure? Brain 113: 397-417

Cohen, F. (1984)

Coping. in J. D. Matarazzo, M. Sh. Weiss, J. A. Herd, N. E. Miller, M. St. Weiss (eds). Behavioural Health: a handbook of health enhancement and disease prevention. New York: John Wiley

Coleman, P. G. (1974)

Measuring Reminiscence Characteristics from Conversation as an Adaptive Feature of Old Age. International Journal of Aging and Human Development, 5 (3): 281-294

Coleman, P. G. (1986)

Ageing and Reminiscence Processes: social and clinical implications. Chichester, New York: John Wiley & Sons

Coleman, P. G. (1994)

Reminiscence Within the Study of Ageing, in J. Bornat (ed). Reminiscence Reviewed: perspectives, evaluations achievements, Buckingham, Philadelphia: Open University Press

Coleman, P. G., Aubin, A., Robinson, M., Ivani-Chalian, C., & Briggs, R. (1993)

Predictors of Depressive Symtoms and Low Self Esteem in a Follow-Up Study of Elderly People Over 10 Years. International Journal of Geriatric Psychiatry. 8: 343-389

Cook, J. B. (1984)

Reminiscing: how it can help confused nursing home residents. Social Casework :The Journal of Contemporary Social Work. Feb.1984: 90-93

Conway, M. (1990)

Autobiographical Memory: an introduction Milton Keynes, Philadelphia: Open University Press.

Costa, P. T., & McCrae, R. R. (1988)

Personality in Adulthood: a six year longitudinal study of self reports and spouse ratings on the NEO personality inventory. Journal of Personality and Social Psychology 54 (5): 853-863

Cummings, E., & Henry, W. (1961)

Growing Old: The Process of Disengagement New York: Basic Books

Damasio, A. R., Van Hoesen, G. W., & Hyman, B. T. (1990)

Reflections on the Selectivity of Neuropathological Changes in Alzheimer's Disease in M. F. Schwartz (ed). Modular Deficits in Alzheimer-Type Dementia. Cambridge, Massachusetts. London: The MIT Press.

Darwin, C. (1872)

The Expression of the Emotions in Man and Animals. London, New York: Philosophical Library.

Davies, M. (1993)

Counselling: a statistical analysis within the primary health care team. The Journal of Counselling in Medical Settings. 37: 5-10

Davis, R. (1989)

My Journey into Alzheimer's Disease Scripture Press

Denzin, N. K. (1989a)

Interpretive Interactionism

Newbury Park CA, London: Sage Publishers

Denzin, N. K. (1989b)

Interpretive Biography

Newbury Park CA, London, New Delhi:

Sage Publishers

Digman, J. M. (1990)

Personality Structure; emergence of the five factor model. Annual review Psychology. 41: 417-440

Dobrof, R. (1984)

Introduction: a time for reclaiming the past.

in M. Kaminsky (ed). The Uses of Reminicence: new ways of working with older adults. New York: The Haworth Press

Egan, G. (1975)

The Skilled Helper: model, skills, and methods for effective helping. Monterey, California: Brookes/Cole

Ekman, P. (1984)

Expression and the Nature of Emotion

in K. Scherer & P.Ekman (eds).

Approaches to Emotion

Hillsdale, NJ: Lawrence Erlbaum Associates

Ekman, P., Friesen, W. V., & Ellsworth, P. (1972)

Emotion in the Human Face

Elmsford, New York: Pergammon Press

Erikson, E. H. (1963)

Childhood and Society (2nd edition).

New York: Norton

Eysenck, M. W., & Keane, M. T. (1990)

Cognitive Psychology: a students handbook. London,

Hillsdale, NJ: Lawrence Erlbaum Associates

Eysenk, H. J. (1967)

The Biological Basis of Personality

Springfield Il: Thomas

Eysenk, H. J. (1973)

Eysenk on Extraversion

New York: John Wiley

Falkingham, J. (1989)

Dependency and Ageing in Britain: a re-examination

of the evidence. Journal of Social Policy.18 (2): 211-213

Farran, C. J., & Keane -Hagerty, E. (1989)

Communicating Effectively with Dementia Patients.

Journal of Psychosocial Nursing. 27 (5): 13-17.

Feil, N. (1982)

V/F Validation: the Feil method

Cleveland Ohio: Edward Feil Productions

Feil, N. (1985)

Resolution: the final life task

Journal of Humanistic Psychology. 25 (2): 91-105

Feil, N. (1992)

Validation Therapy with Late-Onset Dementia, in G. M. Jones and B. L. Miesen (eds). Care-Giving in Dementia: research and applications,

London: Routledge

Flemming, A. S., Rickards, L. D., Santos, J. F., & West, P. R. (1986)

Report on a Survey of Community Mental Health Centres.3. Washington D.C: Action Committee to Implement the Mental Health Recommendations of the 1981 White House Conference on Ageing.

Folkman, S., Lazarus, R. S., Gruen, R., & Delongis, A. (1986)

Appraisal, Coping, Health Status and Psychological Symptom. Journal of Personality and Social Psychology. 50: 571-579

Freeman, M. (1993)

Rewriting The Self: history, memory, narrative.

London, New York: Routledge

Freud, S. (1920/1955)

Beyond the Pleasure Principle. Vol. 18 of the Standard Edition, London:Hogarth

Friedman, H. S. & Booth-Kewley, S. (1987)

The "Disease-prone Personality": a meta analytic view of the construct. American Psychologist 42: 539-555

Froggatt, A. (1988)

Self-awareness in Early Dementia in B. Gearing, M. Johnson & T. Heller (eds). Mental Health Problems in Old Age. New York, Chichester: John Wiley, in association with The Open University.

Funkenstein, A. (1993)

The Incomprehensible Catastrophe: memory and narrative. In R. Josselson & A. Lieblich (eds). The Narrative Study of Lives. London: Sage

Gardner, I. (1993)

Psychotherapeutic Intervention in A. Chapman and M. Marshall (eds) Dementia: new skills for social workers. Case Studies for Practice 5. London, Jessica Kingsley

Garland, J. (1994)

What Splendour, It all Coheres: life-review therapy with older people in J.Bornat (ed). Reminiscence Reviewed: perspectives,evaluations achievements. Buckingham, Philadelphia: Open University Press

Gibson, F. (1994)

What Can Reminiscence Contribute to People with Dementia? In J. Bornat (ed). Reminiscence Reviewed: perspectives, evaluations, achievements. Buckingham, Philadelphia: Open University Press

Gilligan, S. G., & Bower, G. H. (1984)

Cognitive Consequences of Emotional Arousal In C. E. Izard, J. Kagan, R. B. Zajonc (eds). Emotions, Cognition and Behaviour Cambridge University Press

Glaser, B., & Strauss, A (1967)

The Discovery of Grounded Theory: Strategies for Qualitative Research Chicago: Aldine

Goldwasser, A., Auerbach, S. M., & Harkins, S. W. (1987)

Cognitive, Affective, and Behavioural Effects of Reminiscence Group Therapy on Demented Elderly. International Journal of Ageing and Human Development.25 (3): 209-222

Goudie, F., & Stokes, G. (1989)

Understanding Confusion.Nursing Times
Sep.27 85 (39)

Goffman, E. (1959)

The Presentation of Self in Everyday Life
New York: Doubleday

Guttman, D. L. (1980)

Psychoanalysis and Aging: a developmental view in S.I. Greenspan & G.H. Pollock (eds). The Course of Life: psychoanalytic contributions towards understanding personality development. Vol.III: Adulthood and the Aging Process Wasington D.C: US Department of Health and Human Services

Haight, B. K. (1988)

The Therapeutic Role of a Structured Life Review Process in Homebound Elderly Subjects.
Journal of Gerontology. 43: 40-44

Haight, B. K. (1989a)

Life-review: a method for pastoral counselling:
Part 1. Journal of Religion and Aging 5 (3):17-29

Haight, B. K. (1989b)

Life-review: a report of the effectiveness of a structured life-review process: Part II. Journal of Religion and Aging. 5 (3): 31-41

Haight, B. K. (1991)

Reminiscing: the state of the art as a basis for practice,International Journal of Ageing and Human Development. 33 (1): 1-32

Haight, B. K., & Dias, J. K. (1992)

Examining Key Variables in Selected Reminiscing Modalities. International Psychogeriatrics. Vol.4 (2): 279-289

Hammersley, M., & Atkinson, P. (1983)

Ethnography: principles in practice
London and New York: Tavistock Publications

Hanley, I., & Hodge, J. (1984)

Psychological Approaches to the Care of the Elderly.
London, Sydney: Croom Helm. New York: Methuen

Hargie, O., Saunders, C., & Dickson, D. (1981)

Social Skills in Interpersonal Communication
London, Sydney:Croom Helm

Hasher, L., Rose, K. C., Zacks, R. T., Sanft, H., & Doren, B. (1985)

Mood, Recall and Selectivity Effects in Normal College Students. Journal of Experimental Psychology [Gen].114: 104-118

Hausman, C. (1992)

Dynamic Psychotherapy with Elderly Demented Patients in G. M. Jones and B. L. Miesen (eds). Care Giving in Dementia: research and applications. London: Routledge

Hawker, R. (1982)

The Interaction between Nurses and Patients' Relatives. Unpublished Thesis: University of Exeter

Helling, I. K. (1988)

The Life History Method: a survey and discussion with Norman K. Denzin.
Studies in Symbolic Interaction 9:211-243

Highlen, P .S., & Hill, C. E. (1984)

Factors Affecting Client Change in Individual Counselling: current status and theoretical speculations. in S. D. Brown & R. W. Lent (eds). Handbook of Counselling Psychology
Chichester, New York, Brisbane: John Wiley

Hillgard, E. R., Atkinson, R. L., & Atkinson, R. C. (1979)

Introduction to Psychology. (7th edition)
London, New York, Tokyo:Harcourt Brace Jovanovitch.

Holland, J. L. (1973)

Making Vocational Choices: a theory of careers
Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice-Hall

Holland L. (1987)

Life Review and Communication Therapy for Dementia Patients Clinical Gerontologist. 6: 62-65

Hutchinson, S. (1986)

Grounded theory:the method in P. L. Munhall & C. J. Oiler (eds).Nursing Research: a qualitative perspective Norwalk Conn: Appleton-Century-Croft

Ineichen, B. (1987)

Measuring the Rising Tide: how many dementia cases will there be by 2001?
British Journal of Psychiatry.150: 193-200

Isen, A. M., Clark, T. E., & Carp, L. (1978)

Affect, Accessibility of Material in Memory and Behaviour; A Cognitive Loop.
Journal of Personal Social Psychology 36 (1): 1-12.

Isohanni, M. (1990)

Coping with Institutional Life at the Old People's Therapeutic Community. Psychiatry. 53: 148-157

Izard, C. E. (1971)

The Face of Emotion
New York: Apple-Century-Crofts

Izard, C. E. (1984)

The Facets and Interfaces of Emotions in R. Bell, J. L. Green, & J. H. Harvey (eds).Interfaces in Psychology Lubbock, TX: Texas Tech Press.

Izard, C. E. (1991)

The Psychology of Emotions
New York, London: Plenum Press

Jones, G. & Burns, A. (1992)

Reminiscing Disorientation Theory in G. M. Jones and B. L. Miesen (eds). Care-Giving in Dementia: research and applications
London: Routledge

James, W. (1894)

The Physiological Basis of Emotion
Psychology Review.1: 516-529

Johnson, M. K. (1983)

A Multiple Entry, Modular Memory System in G. Bower (ed) The Psychology of Learning and Motivation: advances in research theory:
7: 81-123. New York: Academic Press

Johnson, M. K. (1985)

The Origins of Memory in P. C. Kendall (ed). Advances in Cognitive Behavioural Research and Therapy. 4: 1-27, New York: Academic Press

Johnson, M. L. (1976)

That Was Your Life: a biological approach to later life in J. M. A. Munnichs & W. J. A. van den Heuvel (eds). Dependency and Independency in Old Age. The Hague: Martinus Nijhoff

Kaminsky, M. (1984)

'Transfiguring Life: images of continuity hidden among the fragments' in M.Kaminsky (ed). The Uses of Reminiscence: new ways of working with older adults. New York: Haworth Press

Karlsson, I., Brane, G., Ekman, R., Kihlgren, M., Norberg, A., & Widerlof, E. (1987)

Biochemical and Psychological Effects of Integrity Promoting Care. Paper presented at the 111rd. Congress of the International Psychogeriatric Association, Chicago

Ekman, P., Kazdin, A. E. (1980)

Research Designs in Clinical Psychology
New York: Harper & Row.

Kiernat, J. M. (1979)

The Use of Life Review Activity with Confused Nursing Home Residents.
American Journal of Occupational Therapy. 33: 306-310

Kitwood, T. (1988)

The Contribution of Psychology to the Understanding of Senile Dementia in B. Gearing, M. Johnson & T. Heller (eds). Mental Health Problems in Old Age New York, Chichester: John Wiley, in association with The Open University.

Kitwood, T. (1989)

Brain, Mind, and Dementia: with particular reference to alzheimer's disease.Ageing and Society. 9 (1): 1-15

Kitwood, T. (1990a)

Psychotherapy and Dementia, Psychotherapy Section Newsletter, 8: 40-56.

Kitwood, T. (1990b)

The Dialectics of Dementia: with particular reference to alzheimer's disease. Ageing and Society. 10 (2): 177-196

Kitwood, T. (1993)

Towards a Theory of Dementia Care: the interpersonal process. Ageing and Society. 13 (1): 51-67

Kitwood, T. & Bredin, K. (1992)

Towards a Theory of Dementia Care: personhood and well-being. Ageing and Society. 12 (3): 269-287

Knight, B. (1986a)

Management Variables as Predictors of Service Utilization by the Elderly in Mental Health. International Journal of Ageing and Human Development. 23: 141-147

Knight, B. (1986b)

Psychotherapy with Older Adults. Beverley Hills, CA: Sage

Kramer, M., Taube, C. A., & Redick, R. W. (1975)

Patterns of Use of Psychiatric Facilities: past present and future in C. Eisdorfer & M. P. Lawton (eds). The Psychology of Adult Development and Ageing Washington, D.C. American Psychological Association

Kratochwill, T. R. (1978)

Single Subject Research New York: Academic Press

Laing, R. D. (1967)

The Politics of Experience and The Bird of Paradise. Harmondsworth, New York, Victoria, Ontario: Penguin.

Lange, C. G. (1895)

Om Sindsbevaegerser. et Psyko. Fysiolog Studie Copenhagen: Keonar. Source: J. G. Thompson (1988) The Psychobiology of Emotions New York, London: Plenum Press

Lazarus, R. S. (1982)

Thoughts on the Selection between Emotion and Cognition. American Psychologist. 37: 1019-1024

Lazarus, R. S. (1984a)

On the Primacy of Cognition
American Psychologist. 39: 124-129

Lazarus, R. S. (1984b)

Thoughts on the Relationship between Emotion and Cognition in K. R. Scherer & P. Ekman (eds).Approaches to Emotion. Hillsdale, NJ: Lawrence Erlbaum Associates

Lazarus, R. S. (1991)

Emotion and Adaptation
New York, Oxford. Oxford University Press

Lazarus, R. S., & Folkman, S. (1984)

Stress, Appraisal and Coping
New York: Springer

Leventhal, H. (1984)

A Perceptual-Motor Theory of Emotion in L. Berkowitz (ed). Advances in Experimental Social Psychology 17, New York: Academic Press

Lewis, C. N. (1971)

Reminiscing and Self-Concept in Old Age
Journal of Gerontology.26: 240-243

Lewis, M. I., & Butler, R. N. (1974)

Life Review Therapy: putting memories to work in individual and group psychotherapy Geriatrics. 29: 165-173

Lieberman, M.A., & Tobin, S. S. (1983

The Experience of Old Age, Stress, Coping and Survival New York: Basic Books

Liebert, R. M. & Spiegler, M. D. (1978)

Personality: strategies and issues Holmwood, 111: Dorsey Press. Aspen

Light, D. (1980)

Becoming Psychiatrists New York: Norton

Linton, M. (1982)

Transformations of Memory in Everyday Life in U.Neisser (ed). Memory Observed: remembering in natural contexts. San Francisco: Freeman

Lishman, W. A. 1978)

Organic Psychiatry London: Blackwell

Lofland, J. & Lofland, L. H. (1984)

Analysing Social Settings (2nd ed). Belmont, California: Wadsworth Publishing

Lo Gerfo, M. (1980)

Three ways of Reminiscence in Theory and Practice International Journal of Ageing and Human Development.12 (1): 39-48

Luria, A. R. (1973)

The Working Brain:an introduction to Neurophysiology. Middlesex, Baltimore, Victoria: Penguin

Lyons, W. (1982).

Coping with Cognitive Impairment: some family dynamics and helping roles. Journal of Gerontological Social Work. 4:3-21.

McAdams, D. P. (1990)

The Person: an introduction to personality psychology. London, New York, Tokyo: Harcourt Brace Jovanovich

McAdams, D. P. (1993)

Stories We Live By: personal myths and the making of the self. New York: William Morrow

McCrae, R. R., & Costa, P. T. (1987)

Validation of the Five Factor Model of Personality Across Instruments and Observers. Journal of Personality and Social Psychology. 52: 81-90

McMahon, A. W. & Rhudick, P. J. (1964)

Reminiscing: adaptional significance in the aged. Archives of General Psychiatry.10: 292-298.

Magee, B. (1985)

Popper

London; Fontana.

Mandler, G. (1987)

Emotion in R.L. Gregory (ed) The Oxford

Companion to the Mind

Oxford, New York.: Oxford University Press

Mayes, A. (1992)

Brain Damage and Memory Disorders in M.

Gruneberg & P. Morris (eds).Aspects of Memory.

Vol1 : the practical aspects (2nd ed).

London, New York: Routledge

Mead, G.H. (1934)

Mind, Self, and Society

University of Chicago Press

Merleau-Ponty, M. (1964)

Signs

Evanston IL: Northwestern University Press

Merriam, A. E., Aronson, M. K., Gaston, P., Wey, S. L., & Katz, I. (1988)

The Psychiatric Symptoms of Alzheimer's Disease

Journal of the American Geriatric Society, 36:7-12

Mills, M. A. (1991)

Making the Invisible Visible: a qualitive study in the use of reminiscence therapy and counselling skills with dementing elderly people. Unpublished Thesis. University of Bournemouth,

Mills, M. A. (1993)

Hidden Wealth Within Dementia in K. Tout (ed). Elderly Care: a world perspectve, London, New York: Chapman & Hall

Mills, M. A. & Chapman, I. A. H. (1992)

Understanding the Story, Nursing the Elderly. 4 (6): 27-30

Mills, M. A. & Coleman, P. G. (1994)

Nostalgic Memories in Dementia: a case study International Journal of Aging and Human Development. 8 (3): 203-219

Mills, M. A. & Walker, J. (1994)

Memory, Mood and Dementia: a case study Journal of Aging Studies. 8 (1): 17-27

Mishler, E. G. (1986)

The Analysis of Interview Narratives in T.R. Sarbin (ed). Narrative Psychology: the storied nature of human conduct New York: Praeger

Molinari, V., & Reichlin, R. E., (1985)

Life Review Reminiscence in the Elderly: a review of the literature International Journal of Ageing and Human Development. 20 (2): 81-92

Moscovitch, M., & Umiltà, C. (1990)

Modularity and Neuropsychology: modules and central processes in attention and memory in M. F. Schwartz (ed). Modular Deficits in Alzheimer-Type Dementia Cambridge, Massachusetts. London: The MIT Press.

Murphy, E. (1982)

Social Origins of Depression in Old Age British Journal of Psychiatry. 141, 135-142

Myers, J. E. (1990)

Ageing: an overview for mental health counsellors Journal of Mental Health Counselling. 12 (3): 245-259

Myers, J. E., & Blake, R. (1984)

Employment of Gerontological Counselling Graduates: a follow-up study.Personnel and Guidance Journal. 62 (6): 333-335

Nathan, P. (1988)

The Nervous System Oxford, New York: Oxford University Press

Nelson-Jones, R. (1993)

Practical Counselling and Helping Skills: how to use the lifeskills helping model. London, New York: Cassell

Neisser, U. (1981)

John Dean's Memory: a Case Study

Cogniton. 9: 1-22

Noerager Stern, P. (1980)

Grounded Theory Methodology: its uses and processes. Image. X11 (1): 20-23

Odenheimer, G. L. (1989)

Acquired Cognitive Disorders of the Elderly

In B. S. Bender & G. J. Caranosos (eds).

The Medical Clinics of North America

73 (6): 383-1411

Office of Population, Censuses and Surveys (1982)

General Household Survey 1980.

London:HMSO

Paget, M. A. (1983)

Experience and Knowledge

Human Studies, 6 (2): 67-90

Parkin, A. J. (1987)

Memory and Amenesia: an introduction

Oxford, Massachusetts: Basil Blackwell

Parkin, A. J. (1993

Memory: phenomena, experiment and theory
Cambridge Massachusetts, Oxford: Basil Blackwell

Parloff, M. B., Waskow, I. E., & Wolfe, B. E. (1978)

Research on Therapist Variables in Relation to Process and Outcome in S. L. Garfield & A. E. Bergin (eds). Handbook of Psychotherapy and Behaviour Change: an empirical analysis. New York: John Wiley

Plutchik, R. (1980)

A General Psychoevolutionary Theory of Emotion in R. Plutchik & H. Kellerman (eds.). Emotion Theory, Research, and Experience. New York, London: Academic Press

Popper, K. (1980)

The Logic of Scientific Discovery. (10th ed)
London: Hutchinson

Reisberg, B. 1983)

An Overview of Current Concepts of Alzheimer's Disease, Senile Dementia and Age Associated Cognitive decline in B.Reisberg (ed) Alzheimer's Disease
New York: The Free Press,

Reiser, D. E., & Rosen, D. H. (1984)

Medicine as a Human Experience
Baltimore:University Park Press

Rennie, D. L. (1992)

The Unfolding of Reflexivity in S. G. Toukmanian & D. L. Rennie (eds). Psychotherapy Process Research: paradigmatic and narrative approaches Newbury Park CA. London, New Delhi: Sage

Rennie, D. L. & Brewer, L. (1987)

A Grounded Theory of Thesis Blocking Teaching of Psychology 14: 10-16

Rennie, D. L., Philips, J. R., & Quartaro, G. K. (1988)

Grounded Theory:a promising approach to conceptualisation in psychology? Canadian Psychology 29:139-150

Riddoch, M. J., & Humphreys, G. W. (1987)

Visual Object Processing in Optic Aphasia: a case of semantic access agnosia Cognitive Psychology. 4 (2): 131-185

Riddoch, M. J., Humphreys, G. W., Coltheart, M., & Funnell, E. (1988)

Semantic Systems or System? Neuropsychological Evidence Re-examined. Cognitive Neuropsychology. 5: 3-25

Riessman, C. K. (1993)

Narrative Analysis

Qualitative Research Methods, Vol. 30

Newbury Park CA, London, New Delhi: Sage

Robinson, J. A. (1992)

Autobiographical Memory in M.Gruneberg,

P. Morris (eds).Aspects of Memory. Vol 1: the

practical aspects. (2nd ed).

New York, London: Routledge

Rodin, J., Timko, C., & Harris, S. (1985)

The Construct of Control: biological and psychological

correlates in M. P. Lawson & G. L.Maddox (eds).

Annual .Review of Gerontology and Geriatrics

New York: Springer

Rogers C. R. (1961)

Client Centred Therapy

Boston; Houghton-Mifflen

Rogers, C. R. (1975)

Empathic: an unappreciated way of being.

The Counselling Psychologist. 5: 2-10

Rose, S. P. R. (1987)

Memory: biological basis in R. Gregory (ed). The

Oxford Companion to the Mind

New York, Oxford: Oxford University Press

Rosenthal, G. (1993)

Reconstruction of Life Stories: principles of selection in generating stories for narrative biographical interviews in R. Josselson & A. Lieblich (eds). The Narrative Study of Lives. Newbury Park CA. London, New Delhi: Sage

Rosenthal, R. (1966)

Experimenter Effects in Behaviour Research. New York: Appleton-Century-Crofts

Roybal, E.R. (1988)

Mental Health and Ageing: the need for an expanded federal response. American Psychologist.43 (3): 89-194

Runyan, W. M (1982)

Life Histories and Psychobiography: explorations in theory and method. New York, Oxford: Oxford University Press

Salaman, E. (1970)

A Collection of Moments: a study of involuntary memories. London; Longman

Salaman, E. (1982)

'A Collection of Moments' in U.Neisser (ed). Memory Observed: remembering in natural contexts. New York: W.H. Freeman and Co.

Schachter, S., & Singer, J.E. (1962)

Cognitive, Social and Physiological Determinants of Emotional State.Psychological Review. 69: 379-399

Schafer, R. (1981)

Narration in the Psychoanalytic Dialogue in W. J. J. Mitchell (ed). On Narrative. Chicago: University of Chicago Press

Shapiro, E., & Tate, R. B. (1991)

The Impact of a Mental Status Score and a Dementia Diagnosis on Mortality and Institutionalisation. Journal of Aging and Health 3(1): 28-46.

Schulz,R. (1976)

Effects of Control and Predictability on the Physical and Psychological Well-being of the Institutionalised Aged. Journal of Personality and Social Psychology. 33: 563-573.

Schwartz, M. F. (1990)

Introduction in M. F. Schwartz (ed). Modular Deficits in Alzheimer's Type Dementia. Cambridge Massachusetts, London: MIT Press.

Schwartz, M. F. and Stark J. A. (1990)

Clinicopathological Models ofAlzheimer's Disease and Senile Dementia: unravelling the contradictions in M. F. Schwartz (ed). Modular deficits in Alzheimer's Type Dementia. Cambridge Massachusetts, London: MIT Press.

Scott, S., Caird, F. I., & Williams, B. O. (1985)

Communication in Parkinson's Disease London, Sydney: Croom Helm.

Scott Hinkle, J. (1990)

An Overview of Dementia in Older Persons: identification, diagnosis, assessment and treatment. Journal of Mental Health Counselling. 12 (3): 368-383

Scrutton, A. (1989)

Counselling for Older People. London:Edward Arnold

Sherman, E. (1985)

A Phenomenological Approach to Reminiscence and Life Review. The Clinical Gerontologist. 3: 3-16

Siegler, I. C., Welsh, K. A., Dawson, D. V., Fillenbaum, G. G., Earl, N. L., Kaplan, E. B., & Clark, C. M. (1991)

Ratings for Personality Change in Patients Being Evaluated for Memory Disorders. Alzheimers Disease and Associated Disorders 5 (4): 240-250

Siminov, P. V. (1986)

The Emotional Brain: Physiology, Neuroanatomy, Psychology, and Emotion.
New York, London: Plenum Press

Sinason, V. (1992)

Mental Handicap and the Human Condition: new approaches from the Taverstock
London: Routledge

Singer, J. L. (1973)

The Childs World of Make-Believe: Experimental Studies of Imaginative Play.
New York: Academic Press.

Singer, J. L. (1974)

Imagery and Daydream Methods in Psychotherapy and Behaviour Modification.
New York: Academic Press.

Slivinske, l. R., & Fitch, V. L. (1987)

The Effect of Control Enhancing Interventions on the Well-being of Elderly Individuals Living in Retirement Communities
The Gerontologist. 27: 176-181

Spence, D. P. (1982)

Narrative Truth and Historical Truth: meaning and interpretation in psychoanalysis. New York: Norton

Squire, L. R. (1992)

Memory and the Hippocampus; A Synthesis From Findings in Rats, Monkeys and Humans Psychological Review. 99 (2): 195-231

Stivers, C. (1993)

Reflections on the Role of Personal Narrative in Social Science. Signs: Journal of Women in Culture and Society. 18 (2): 408-425

Strauss, A. & Corbin, J. (1990)

Basics of Qualitative Research: grounded theory procedures and techniques
Newbury Park CA. London, New Delhi: Sage

Strauss, A. (1987)

Qualitative Analysis for Social Scientists
New York: Cambridge University Press

Stuart-Hamilton, I. (1991)

The Psychology of Ageing: an introduction
London: Jessica Kingsley

Teasdale, J. D. & Russell, M. L. (1983)

Diffential Effects of Induced Mood on the Recall of Positive, Negative, and Neutral Words.
British Journal of Clinical Psychology.22: 163-172

Teasdale, J. D. & Barnard, P. J. (1993

Affect, Cognition and Change: remodelling depressive thoughts

Hove, East Sussex: Lawrence Erlbaum Associates

Temoshok, L. (1985)

Biopsychosocial Studies on Cutaneous Malignant Melanoma: psychosocial factors associated with prognostic indicators, progression, psychophysiology and tumour-host response.

Social Science Medicine 20: 833-840

Tesch, R. (1991)

Software for Qualitative Researchers: analysis needs and program capabilities in N. G. Fielding & R. M. Lee (eds). Using Computers in Qualitative Research

Newbury Park CA. London, New Delhi: Sage

Thal, L. J. (1988)

Dementia Update: diagnosis and neuropsychiatric aspects. Journal of Clinical Psychiatry. 49: 5-7

The Economist (1990)

Vital World Statistics : a complete guide to the world in figures. London: The Economist Books, Hutchinson

Thompson, J. G. (1988)

The Psychobiology of Emotions

New York, London: Plenum Press

Thompson, P. (1988)

The Voice of the Past

Oxford, New York: Oxford University Press

Tobin, S. S. (1991)

Personhood in Advanced Old Age: implications for practice, New York: Springer.

Tomkins, S. S. (1962)

Affect, Imagery, Consciousness: vol. 1. the positive affects. New York: Springer

Tomkins, S. S. (1963)

Affect, Imagery, Consciousness: vol.2. the negative affects. New York: Springer

Tomkins, S. S. (1981)

The Quest for the Primary Motives: biography and autobiography of an Idea.

Journal of Personality and Social Psychology.41: 306-329

Totman, R. (1990)

Mind, Stress and Health

London: Souvenir Press (E & A) Ltd.

Tulving, E. (1983)

Elements of Episodic Memory

New York, Oxford: Oxford University Press

Van Hoesen, G. W. & Damasio, A. R. (1987)

Neural Correlates of Cognitive Impairment in Alzheimer's Disease. in V. Mountcastle & F. Plum (eds).Higher Functions of the Nervous System. Handbook of Physiology. Bethesda, MD. American Physiological Society

Verwoerdt, A. (1981)

Individual Psychotherapy in Senile Dementia in N. Miller & G. Cohen (eds). Clinical Aspects of Alzheimer's Disease and Senile Dementia. New York: Raven Press

Walker, J. M., Akinsanya, J. A., Davis, B. D., & Marcer, D. (1990)

The Nursing Management of Elderly Patients with Pain in the Community; study and recommendations Journal of Advanced Nursing. 15 (10): 211-220

Waters, E. B. (1990)

The Life Review: strategies for working with individuals and groups.Journal of Mental Health Counselling.12 (3): 270-278

Webster, J. D. & Young, R. D. (1988)

Process Variables of the Life Review: counselling implications.International Journal Of Ageing and Human Development. 26 (4): 315-323

White, H. (1973)

Metahistory

Balitimore MD: John Hopkins University Press

Widdershoven, G. A. M. (1993)

The Story of Life: hermeneutic perspectives on the relationship between narrative and life history in R. Josselson & A. Lieblich (eds).The Narrative Study of Lives. Newbury Park CA. London, New Delhi: Sage

Williams, J. M., Watts. F. N., Macleod. C. & Mathews, A. (1988),

Cognitive Psychology and Emotional Disorders, Chichester, New York: John Wiley & Sons.

Williams, R., Coleman, P. G. & Briggs, R. (1995)

Carer Rated Personality Changes Associated with Senile Dementia. International Journal of Geriatric Psychiatry.10. 231-236

Winnicott, D. M. (1971)

Playing and Reality

London: Taverstock Publications

Wong, P. T. & Watt, L. M. (1991)

What Types of Reminiscence are Associated with Succesful Aging? Journal of Psychology and Ageing, 6 (2): 272-279

Woods, R.T. (1989)

Alzheimer's Disease: coping with a living death London: Souvenir Press

Woods, R. T., Portnoy, S., Head, D., & Jones, G. (1992)

Reminiscence and Life Review with Persons with Dementia: which way forward? in G. M. Jones, & B. L. Miesen (eds). Care-Giving in Dementia: research and applications. London: Routledge

World Population Prospects, (1986)

United Nations

Yin, R. K. (1989)

Case-Study Research: design and methods Applied Social Research Methods Series, 5. Revised ed. Newbury Park CA. London, New Delhi: Sage

Zajonc, R. B. (1980)

Feeling and Thinking: preferences need no inferences. American Psychologist. 35 (2): 151-175

Zajonc, R. B. (1984a)

The Interaction of Affect and Cognition in K. Scherer & P. Ekman (eds). Approaches to Emotion Hillsdale, NJ: Lawrence Erlbaum Associates

Zajonc, R. B. (1984b)

The Primacy of Affect in K. Scherer & P Ekman (eds). Approaches to Emotion Hillsdale, NJ: Lawrence Erlbaum Associates

Zola-Morgan, S. & Squire, L. R. (1990)

Identification of the Memory System Damaged in Medial Temporal Lobe Amnesia in L. R. Squire & E. Lindenlaub (eds). The Biology of Memory. F. K. Schattauer Stuttgart, Germany: Verlag.